

MEMOIRS

OF THE

Fremont d'Ablancourt (N.)
Sieur d'Ablancourt.

CONTAINING

A General History of the Court and Kingdom of *Portugal*, from the *Pyrenean Treaty*, to the Year 1668. with a full Relation of all the Battels and Sieges in the War between *Spain* and *Portugal*, under the Command of the late Duke of *Schomberg*, then in the *Portugueze* Service. With the Character, and some material Passages of that Great General's Life: As also an exact Account of the deposing of the late King *Alfonso*, and the Accession of *Don Pedro*, his present *Portugueze* Majesty; and other remarkable Transactions, whereby will appear the Genius, Policy and Strength of that Nation, and its Interest with respect to Foreign Courts: Also the Treaty of Peace between *Portugal* and *Spain*, and the League Offensive and Defensive between *France* and *Portugal*.

Translated from the *French* Copy, Printed at *Paris*, 1701.

L O N D O N: Printed for *Ralph Smith*, under the *Royal-Exchange*, *Cornhill*; and *James Round* in *Exchange-Alley*, 1703.



3 K. h.

Introduction.

THO' the Treaty into which Her Majesty and Her Allies are entred with the Crown of *Portugal*, and the mighty Preparations which are making to carry on a vigorous War on that side, render the usefulness of this Translation so apparent, that little more remains to be said in its Favour; as 'tis not Customary to introduce VVorks of this Nature into the VVorld, without a preliminary Compliment by way of Preface. I shall here give you a brief Account of the Memoirs with which you're now presented in *English*, having been compos'd

A 2 long

Introduction.

long ago by a *French Envoy* at the Court of *Portugal*, and lately published at *Paris* with the general Approbation of the judicious Readers.

The Throne of *Portugal* becoming vacant by the Death of *Henry*, the only *Portugueze* King of that Name, in the Year 1580. *Philip II.* then King of *Spain*, having sent the Duke of *Elvas* into that Kingdom with a powerful Army, Justice by that means giving place to Force, he and his Heirs enjoy'd the Crown of *Portugal* the space of Threescore Years; till in the Year 1640. that Three of the *Portugueze* Nobility having form'd the Design of delivering their Country from the Bondage it had so long groaned under, (the *Ursurpers* being almost all in one Day

Introduction.

Day expell'd the Kingdom) the Crown of *Portugal* devolv'd upon it's True and Lawful Heir *John VI.* Duke of *Braganza*, and *IV.* of the Name King of *Portugal*. Upon which a War Ensuing with *Spain*, *Portugal* would certainly have sunk under the Weight of so mighty an Enemy, if the new King had not obtain'd Succours from *France* and other Places, with which having maintain'd the War during his Life, and the Queen Regent continuing it after his Death, when at the Conclusion of the Peace between *France* and *Spain*, at the *Pyrenean Treaty*, the whole Power of that Monarchy was employed only against *Portugal*, the Late famous Marshal and Duke (then Count) of *Schomberg* going thither with some *French* Volunteers, and other Officers and Soldiers;

A 3

Introduction.

diers ; and being some time after followed by some Regiments of *English* Auxiliaries , upon the Conclusion of the Match between His Majesty of *Great Britain*, King *Charles II.* and the Infanta of *Portugal* , they carried under the Command of that great General the Glory of the *English* Name, as far as their most Renown'd Ancestors had done before them, and especially at the Memorable Battel of *Villa Vitisosa*, where Count *Schomberg* with his Three Sons the Counts *Frederick* and *Charles*, and His present Grace the Duke of *Schomberg*, then known by the Name of Count *Meinard*, at the Head of those *English* Troops gave Marks of the most unparalleled Conduct and Bravery ; as they did of the greatest Intrepidity and Valour , to which *Portugal* then and afterwards ow'd Her Safety and Preservation. In

Introdnction.

In fine, Nothing can be more fit than the Reading of these Memoirs to make the Officers who are to serve in *Portugal* acquainted with the Genius and Manners of their Friends, and Enemies, the *Portugueze* and *Spaniards*, with their way of Fighting, with the Situation and Strength of the Forts and Places of those Countries; and in a word with every thing that 'tis necessary they should know. Nor is there any thing can so much justify the fitness of Her Majesty's Choice of His Grace the Duke of *Schomberg* to Command Her Majesty's Forces and those of Her Allies in that Kingdom, as the Knowledge of the Glorious Actions performed by his Father in his Presence, and by his Grace himself after so brave a Pattern, which will inspire

Introduction.

inspire the Officers and Soldiers who shall have the Honour to follow him to the War, with such an intire Confidence and Assurance in their General, that nothing will be Difficult that he Commands; His Grace will be received there as their Second Saviour and Deliverer, with the loudest Acclamations of the Joyful Multitude, who impatient to be led on by him to Victory and Glory, it is to be presumed that his Sword may prove as fatal to the *Spaniards*, as the Accents of his Name are pleasant to the *Portuguese*, who hold it to this Day, in a Degree of Veneration very little inferior to Idolatry.



ME-

the
me
as l
bu
W

MEMOIRS
OF THE
Sieur *D' Ablancourt*,
Envoy for the
French King
IN
PORTUGAL.

AFTER I had perus'd what I found written, of the late Wars between the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese*, I perceived with infinite Regret, that the Glory of the most Illustrious and most Successful Atchievements, had been invidiously withdrawn from such as had perform'd 'em, and for politick Ends attributed to those, who had little or no Share therein. Wherefore, in order to do Justice to every one, by
B ren-

rendring to each his Due, I have essay'd to write what hath pass'd between these two Nations, from that call'd the *Pyrenean Treaty*, in 1659, to the Conclusion of the Peace at *Lisbon*, in the Year 1668, between *Portugal* and the *Castilian* Crown. Together with the Affairs of War, during this Interval, I have intermix'd what happen'd in the two Courts, where we shall behold amazing Revolutions; and hereby we shall be sufficiently enabled to make a Just Estimate of the Genius and Temper of these People. My principal Care in this Recital hath been, to keep close by the Truth: This was my only Aim, from which I have not been oblig'd to swerve by any indirect Considerations, as having nothing either to hope or fear from hence: neither have I advanced any thing, but what I have either seen my self, or received from Persons of unquestionable Credit. The Brevity I have design'd, allows me not to represent every thing in its full Extent: But as it is sufficient, slightly only to glance at many Things of lesser Moment; so those of Importance are plainly enough expos'd to the View of the Discerning: and we know that from a Window even but half opened, a Person of clear Sight, may have the Prospect of a very large Country.

ALTHO' the *French*, during a twenty years War, had reap'd no great Advantages from their Alliance with the *Portugueze*, yet did they endeavour all they could, in the Year 1659, to bring his Catholick Majesty, to acknowledge the King of *Portugal*, and to treat with him as a Crown'd Head. But not being able to obtain this from the King of *Spain*, several Proposals were made to the Queen of *Portugal*, in sundry Embassies to that purpose

purpose, of terms of Accomodation, whereby she might be comprehended in the Peace of the *Pyrenees*; all which had no effect: for the *Spaniards* remain'd firm in their Resolution to exclude the *Portugueze*, and perswaded themselves, that if *Portugal* became not either tributary, or at least dependant on *Spain*, with apparent Signs of subjection, they might then without difficulty become Masters of it, and thereby make up the loss of what they had been oblig'd to quit to *France*.

The *Portugueze*, on the other side, notwithstanding their own Weakness, being prepossess'd with an Opinion, that they ought not in the least to yield to the *Castilians*, and not considering as they ought what fatal Consequences were like to ensue, did persist in their Refusal to acknowledge that either their King or State did at all depend on that of *Castile*. Thus the Treaty of the *Pyrenees* being brought to a Conclusion, they were altogether excluded from any benefit thereby, and depriv'd even of Hope, the last Refuge of the Miserable. And now every one that knew the present State of their Affairs, perceiving them without either Allies, Men or Mony, was perswaded, that their Destruction was irretrievable.

The Person, who of all others was most affected with their Misfortunes, was *Henry de la Tour* of *Auvergne*, Viscount of *Turenne*. He was touch'd with a very sensible Regret, that a Peace should be agreed to by the *French*, when they were even at the point to gain an absolute Conquest over the *Neiberlands*; and, That in order to preserve them almost intirely for *Spain*, they should part with the Advantages they had obtain'd, by so many Sieges and Battels, at a vast Expence of

Blood and Treasure. Wherefore fearing least *Spain*, through the benign Influences of this Peace, should recover her strength in such a measure, as to be able a second time to empty *France* of both her Men and Mony, and least the *French* ceasing from War, should unlearn the Art thereof, he laid a Design to Assist the *Portuguese*. To this Intent, with greater Assiduity than formerly, he improv'd his Acquaintance with *Don Juan de Acoſta*, Count of *Soure*, the *Portuguese* Ambassador in *France*, entering into a Correspondence with him; who after Publication of the Peace, being oblig'd to appear no more publickly in *France*, The Viscount of *Turenne* kept him privately conceal'd at his Own House and in the Neighbourhood, unknown to all yea even the most Part of his own Domesticks. During this time they had long and frequent Consultations, the Result of which was, That without further waiting for the Count of *Harcourt* Master of the Horse in *France*, who before his Departure, would make sure his Office for his Son; or harkening to the Proposals made by other Persons of Quality and Merit, that offer'd their Service to *Portugal*, the Count of *Sour* should in the Name of his Mistress the Queen Regent of *Portugal*, treat with the Count of *Schomberg*, for whom the Viscount of *Turenne* had a very particular Regard, which he had manifested on many Occasions.

Frederick Count of *Schomberg* had now acquir'd a very considerable Authority and Reputation in the World. He had serv'd his Apprentiship to the Military Art in the Wars of *France* and *Germany*, and became a great Master thereof in *Holland*, under *Frederick Henry* Prince of *Orange*, and *William* the Second his Son. After the

‘ That the Count of *Schomberg* should serve in
‘ *Portugal* in Quality of Camp-Master-General of
‘ the Army of *Alentejo*, with a Pension of twelve
‘ thousand

‘ thousand Crowns, and expresse Provision, that if
 ‘ the Military Governour for that Province should
 ‘ dye, or resign his Office, the Count of *Schom-*
 ‘ *berg* should succeed him therein: (these are the
 two principal Offices of this Country.) This
 Province was at that time the chief seat of the
 War between *Spain* and *Portugal*, as being the
 Place betwixt the Kingdoms, which was most o-
 pen, and of easiest Access, and by which the
Castilians had always made their mightiest Ef-
 forts.

This Treaty, how secretly so ever manag’d,
 was forthwith known to Cardinal *Mazarin*, who
 privately remonstrated to the Count, what Trou-
 bles it might Occasion; ‘ That *Spain* would un-
 ‘ questionably complain of it to *France*, and that
 ‘ to avoid all Difficulties it was most expedient
 ‘ to break it: to which the Count of *Schomberg*
 only answer’d, ‘ That by the Peace, every one
 ‘ was left at Liberty to Chuse what Party he
 ‘ pleas’d; and that, supposing the Worst, *France*
 ‘ might disown him, as being a Stranger. The
 Queen Mother *Anne* of *Austria*, who at the same
 time had Notice thereof, said by the bye to the
 Viscount *Turrene*, touching his Arm, *Know you*
not Monsieur de Turrene that I have a particular
Regard for Spain? But now my Apprehension is
over, for I have effected what I desir’d: meaning the
 Peace with *Spain*. Which put the Viscount in
 greater Fear, than ever the sight of an Enemy
 could do.

The Count of *Schomberg*, for the more expe-
 dite Performance of what he had uundertaken to
 the Count *de Soure*, gave all requisite Orders for
 levyïng of experienc’d Soldiers, and Skilful Com-
 manders, therewirh to form a Body in *Portugal*,
 that

that might serve for a Model to the Soldiery of that Country : and without further Loss of time, he departed from *France* about the beginning of Autum, and went to *Germany*, where he set in order his Domestick Affairs, and returning by *Holland*, went Over into *England*, whence he embark'd in a Vessel which he freighted himself : He stop'd at the *Downs*, to take in twenty four Officers, and four Hundred Horsemen, which he had sent over from *France* to wait for him at *Deal* : and from thence, under the Convoy of one Frigat given him by the King of *England*, he arrived on the last of *October*, with all his Men before *Havre-de-Grace*, whither the Count *de Soure* was come, with some Horsemen and reform'd Officers in order to accompany the Count of *Schomberg* to *Portugal*.

The Ambassador for his Catholick Majesty in *France*, coming to the Knowledge of these things, made great Complaints every where, and especially at Court. For his Satisfaction, the Regiment of Dragoons which Count *Schomberg* commanded there, were taken from him, and the *Scotch* Guards had Orders no further to obey him. The same Ambassador also had permission from the most Christian King, to make the Count Prisoner where-ever he could find him ; whereof the Count receiving Advice from *Havre-de-Grace*, he remain'd in the Road with the *English* Frigat. The *Spaniards* were much vex'd at the failing of their Design, but being resolv'd to hinder the *Portuguese* from going aboard, they assaulted the Count *de Soure* and his Men, and many were wounded on both Sides ; notwithstanding which they embark'd, and on the Morrow after set sail. Some days after, they put in at the Island of *Oues-*

sant, to take on Board *Gomon de Monjorge*, who was here to be in readiness with his Regiment : but the Transport Ships from *Holland*, being not yet come, they were oblig'd to sail without him ; who embarking about three months after, was in great Dangers by Sea, and being taken by the *Spaniards*, was carried to *Vigo* ; from thence he was remov'd to another Place of strength in *Gallicia*, where he remain'd in close imprisonment for four Years, and was not dismiss'd, till he had engag'd himself not to bear Arms in *Portugal*. He was a Person of a dextrous Conduct, and great Courage. Two of his Captains with several Horsemen escap'd into *Portugal*, where they were placed in a *French* Regiment.

The Count of *Schomberg* and the Count de *Soure*, as hath been said, being embark'd, sail'd upon the first of *November* from the Road of *Havre-de-Grace*, and upon the thirteenth of the same, arriv'd in the Port of *Lisbon*. No sooner had Count *Schomberg* set Foot on Land, but he was met by the People of Quality, who hearing that he was come, hastned to the Shoar to receive him, and conducted him in the Coach of the King Don *Alphonso*, to an House of Pleasure without the City, where he was visited by all the Court, and splendidly entertain'd for three Days ; after which he went to wait upon the King, and his Mother the Queen Regent ; and in some time after this, he went to Review the *Soldiers* he had brought with him, being now furnish'd with Horses. But before we go any further in these Matters, it will not be inconvenient, to take a short View of *Portugal*, and the Posture wherein Affairs were before the Arrival of the Count of *Schomberg*.

The

The *Portuguese* had now for the space of sixty years groan'd under the *Spanish* Yoak, and sigh'd in vain for Liberty, bewailing the loss of these happy times, wherein they had seen, whatsoever was most valuable throughout the Universe, convey'd by the *Tagus* unto *Lisbon*, in the View of their Native Kings; Princes, who esteem'd it no less glorious to promote the Felicity of their Subjects, than the Grandure of their own Estate, diffusing among them, with a liberal hand, these vast Treasures and Riches. No sooner had they certainly understood, that the *Catalonians* had thrown off the *Castilian* Chains, but they begun to express their extreme Regret, that herein they had been prevented by them, and ceased not on all Occasions to say, that by their Diligence they ought now to repair that Fault: yet did they proceed no further than only to Discourse in this Manner, and that for near the space of a Year; without coming to any Resolution, until about the end of *November* in the year 1640.

'Twas at this time, that three of the *Portugucze* Nobility, being at Liberty from the hearing of others, began to talk warmly of that Affair, which had been the ordinary subject of their entertainment, and liberally upbraided one another with defect of Courage; so that in the end they came to this Resolution, That they would meet again to Morrow being *Thursday*, each bringing along with him one faithful Friend, and then, without further Delay, give the finishing stroke to their Design; all which was most exactly perform'd, a seventh Person being also there present, who was likewise conscious to their Undertaking. After they had concerted their Enterprize to their Liking, and enter'd into new Engagements

agements of secrecy, they agreed to meet in the Guard-Hall of the Palace the *Saturday* following, being the first of *December*, about four a Clock in the Evening, each with three resolute young Men in whom they could confide. These Guards are made up of *Germans*, whose number is ordinarily but small; for being only oblig'd to march at such times as the King goes abroad, they are all the rest of the Day busied in going of Errands, and carrying Letters or other things from one place to another.

The seven Conspirators came upon *Saturday* to the Place assign'd for their meeting, at the precise Hour appointed, together with twenty young Men, (for one had fail'd to come) by whose Assistance they dispers'd the Guards. In the next place, they resolv'd to make away *Vasconcellos*, Secretary of State to the Dutchess Dowager of *Mantua*, that govern'd the Kingdom in the Name and Authority of *Philip IV.* King of *Spain*. The Way from the Guard-Hall to the Stairs of the Palace, where that chief Minister lodg'd, lay thorow a Gallery that was pretty dark; for having Windows only on one side, the light was most part intercepted by little Appartments belonging to the Secretary-Office, behind the Walls of which there was only left a very strait and obscure Passage. As these, to whom the Execution of this matter was committed, hastened with some Noise along the Gallery, one of the Clerks came out with his Sword in hand to know what they would have; whom they kill'd, without further ado, and passing on, went up to the Chamber of *Vasconcellos*, the principal Object of the Hatred of the *Portugueze*. Not finding him there, they threaten to kill the Keeper of the Door, unless he

he discover where his Master is ; and he to save his own Life, gave them a sign with his Head, that what they sought after was in a Cupboard or Closet in the Wall, which they immediately search'd, and found him lying all along begging for his Life ; but without minding what he said, they gave him several Wounds, and throwing him over the Window into the Court, they cry'd with repeated voices, *God save King John the Fourth.* The Acclamation was immediately received by those who had remain'd behind in the Guard-Hall, and as it were in an Instant, the Palace did in all parts resound with the Eccho's of *God save King John the Fourth.* These things being done about the close of the Evening, the People not knowing what might fall out, shut their Shops, and the *Portugueze*, whom the *Spaniards* allow'd not to wear Swords, run immediately to Arms. In this Confusion, tho' the most part knew not who this Don *John* was, yet they fail'd not to cry out with the rest, *God save Don John King of Portugal*, which Joyful Noise passing with an incredible Swiftneſs from Street to Street, and Ward to Ward, the whole City was in a trice filled with Acclamations in favour of an absent, and almost unknown Prince.

In the mean time, the Nobles being assembled, take care to send Circular Letters to all the Towns in the Kingdom, after they had in the first place dispatch'd Expresses to *Don John*, the eighth Duke of *Braganza*, who at this time was at *Villa Viciosa*, twenty six Leagues distant from *Lisbon*. This was the Place of that Prince's ordinary Residence, especially from the time, which was about a year ago, that he had refus'd to Command the Army, destin'd by *Spain* for reducing

ducing the revolted *Catalonians*. The Prince receiv'd not the News with all the Joy might have been expected; not being able to bring himself to a Resolution of accepting a Crown, which he was afraid he was not in a Capacity to maintain. In this Irresolution of Mind the Princess his Wife represented unto him, *That there was now no place for Deliberation, seeing his being nam'd King of Portugal, had render'd him obnoxious to Spain; That he had begun to be suspected at Madrid, upon his Refusal to go to Catalonia, and that the Offer of the Crown of Portugal, would render him now compleatly criminal in the Eyes of that Court; that therefore it was better to accept than reject the Scepter, and to dye a King, than a Private Subject.* The Prince tho' he assented to her Reasons, yet, was not very forward of making any further advances; and when he set out, it was under a Pretence of Hunting, that he might leave room for Rerteat, if the People should retract their Choice.

Upon that same *Saturday* in the Evening, the Deliverers of their Country, went to the Cathedral, surrounded with Crowds of People, to sing *Te Deum*, whereat the Chapter would not be present, whatever Importunities were us'd with them to that Effect; as believing this was only a sudden popular Commotion, that would quickly be at an end: but to Morrow, which was *Sunday* the second of *December*, finding the People to abide by their Choice, they resolv'd to make a Solemn Procession. Near unto the great Church stands the House where *St. Anthony of Padua* was born, at the Corner of which there is a Crucifix: to this when the Bishop was come he made a halt, and kneeling on one Knee, with a voice

voice loud enough to be heard by the most part of the following Multitude, he said ; *Lord, if this Action, which we are now constrain'd to do, be well pleasing unto thee, testifie it unto us by some sign.* At which Words the more designing of those that were near, cry'd, that the Crucifix had made a Sign, and these at a greater Distance, cry'd out a Miracle ; and all together frequently repeated *God Save King John the Fourth.*

The Nobles in the mean time were not a little vex'd, that they had heard nothing from their Prince, tho' *Sunday* was now almost over : wherefore after several Expresses, they dispatch'd to him that Night, a Person of good Sense, to remonstrate to him, of what Importance his speedy Arrival was. This last Messenger met him about the middle of the way, on the Plains of *Montemor* a Hawking as he went along. But so soon as the Prince had understood from him the state of Affairs, without any further Deliberation or Loss of time, he posted straight to *Aldea Gallega* which was ten Leagues distant from the Place where then he was, and there finding a little Bark with two Water-men, he went into it, and was transported to *Lisbon*, which is on the other side of the *Tajo* right over against this Place, where the River is three Leagues in Breadth. He landed at the Court of the Palace, which is an oblong Square, encompass'd with Buildings on three Sides, the fourth being wash'd by the River, from which it is only parted by a Wall built breast high in form of a Terrass. All this large Extent of Ground was covered with infinite Numbers of People of every Condition, Sex and Age, who for these two days past had impatiently expected the Coming of their Prince. Tho' every one's Eyes were

were turn'd towards *Aldea Gallega*, yet no Man did so much as in the least suspect, that a little Bark, which they might behold making towards them, had the honour to carry their King; which was the Reason, that at his landing, he found so great Difficulty to pass through the Crowds to a Theater that was erected on purpose for him, because he was altogether unknown. But when being come to the Place he appear'd thereon to all the People, the Joy of the Multitude was so extreme; that never any King before was proclaim'd with such a general Applause. *Don John* on this Day having been acknowledg'd King by the City of *Lisbon*, was, by that time the Week was out, proclaim'd through all the other Cities of the Kingdom. And as for other Places that were yet under the Dominion of *Spain*, whether in *Asia*, *Africa*, or *America*, the deplorable Remains of these famous Conquests and Discoveries, made by King *John* the first and his illustrious Posterity, within the space of about an Year, they all follow'd the Example of *Portugal*; save only the Town of *Ceuta*, to which they had neglected by circular Letters to send Advice of what had pass'd, as they had done to others.

That which was most to be admir'd in this Revolution, was, That only three persons had lost their Life therein. The Fort of *Bellem*, which stands in the *Tagus*, about a League below *Lisbon*, and commands that River, was surrendred; as also the Castle of *Saint George*, which was instead of a Citadel; tho' not without first having endured several Vollies of Cannon, which were desired by the Governours themselves, lest it should be said they had delivered them up without Resistance. And the Garrisons of these two Places together

together with the Dutchesse Dowager of *Mantua*, were conducted by a strong Guard to the Frontiers of *Castile*, where they were left at Liberty.

The *French*, upon receiving these News, flatter'd themselves with the Hopes of a mighty Diversion to the *Castilian* Arms; being not yet sufficiently acquainted with the Genius and Inclinations of King *John*, the utmost Bounds of whole Ambition extended not beyond the Limits of *Portugal*, the Dominions whereof only, he desir'd to preserve to himself, without aspiring further towards those of *Spain*, concerning which he had laid down a firm Resolution, never to lay claim to any part thereof: And therefore it was, that he had obstinately shut his Ear to all Reasons of State and Policy, that were alledg'd to that Effect, whether by his own Subjects or his Allies. Hence it was, that during the whole sixteen years of the Reign of this Prince, nothing of moment was transacted, unless we account it for such, that he had establish'd and maintain'd himself upon the Throne, and made head against the Formidable Power of the *English* Protector.

After his Death, the Queen *Louisa Frances de Gusman*, his Widow, of the illustrious House of *Medina Sidonia*, was declar'd Regent, and was to have the Government of her Son during his Minority. She was a Princess of great Wit and Courage, and had without doubt signaliz'd the Glory of her Reign, had she been assisted with Counsellors of a suitable Capacity, but especially had her eldest Son been worthy of such a Mother. The King *Don Alfonso* the sixteenth of that name, was but then entred upon the fourteenth Year of his Age. This Prince, when about three or four years of Age, was seiz'd with such a Violent fit of Sickness,

Sickness, that from thenceforth he remain'd impotent on one Side; and withall his Understanding was so impair'd, or to speak more mildly, he became so untoward, that he was altogether unable of any Improvement by Instruction; which occasion'd it to be said, that he was ill born, ill educated, with Lewdness of Manners, and a mighty Inclination to Cruelty. 'Tis certain that from that time forth, all these Defects were to be found in him, which were also encreased as he grew in Years. Moreover he would not suffer that any one in his Presence should presume, to improve the Capacity of his Brother *Don Pedro*, a Child of about four years of Age, who was oftentimes permitted to concur with his elder Brother in his irregularities, in hopes that by this means he might in part bereclaim'd from his Brutality. This same Child *Don Pedro* had ever been the Darling of his Mother, since the Death of his Eldest Brother Prince *Theodosius*, and from thenceforth she had fram'd a Design to set him on the Throne, and to shut up his Brother *Don Alfonso* in a Convent, the motions of her Affection, herein concurring with Reason of State. The *Infanta Catharine* was the eldest of three, and a Princess of great Vertue, to whose consummate Happiness nothing had been wanting, had Heaven thought fit, she should have supply'd an Heir worthy of herself, unto the *English* Throne. As for the Prince *Theodosius*, he was taken from the World, some years before his Father; leaving the disconsolate *Portugueze*, after their great Hopes conceived of him, in vain to bewail his untimely Fate.

The Queen, who was naturally of an enterprising Spirit, was extremely desirous of performing

ing something considerable, whereby she might gain to her self a Reputation in the World; but the Slowness of her Council made her altogether hopeless, and to envy the Happiness of these Sovereigns, who are oblig'd to advise with none but themselves. And, indeed, her Ministers and Counsellors, loving their ease, busied themselves rather in Discouraging of the Miseries of the State, than in endeavouring to apply timely Remedies thereto; every one being more careful, out of Interest or Vain-glory, to maintain his own, than to submit to a better Opinion; insomuch that the best Designs, prov'd ordinarily abortive, when once they came to be debated in these supreme Councils.

But to return to the State of the Government under the Regency: The Queen was no sooner advertised, that *Spain* was making up a Peace with *France*, than apprehending her Realms to be in extreme Danger, she together with her Counsellors, endeavoured with the Utmost of their Skill, to divert the *French* from that Alliance, or get *Portugal* included therein. But whatever that Princess could alledge, to oblige the *French* to protect the most ancient Branch of the last Race of their Kings, together with all her other Reasons, and the Remonstrances of her Ambassadors, prov'd altogether unequal; and that Peace, which was so glorious for *France*, and so necessary to *Spain*, was concluded, the *Portuguese*, as was said above, being intirely left out. And now they perceive too late the evil Effects of the over-scrupulous Policy of King *John*, whereby they were now brought to the Brink of Ruin. This Prince could never be induc'd to think of extending his Conquests beyond

his own Dominions; but trusting too much to his own Strength, had firmly laid his Resolution to bear the Weight of the War alone, against all the Power of *Spain* assisted with the Forces of *Germany*, and Treasures of *Peru*: and this notwithstanding the small Extent of his Estates, encompass'd on all Sides with their Enemies, without the Protection or Alliance of foreign Prince or State, destitute of Men, Mony, Horse, and Ammunition, rejected by *France*, disown'd by the Pope, and perpetually infested by the *Hollanders*.

The better to understand what has now been said, 'tis to be observ'd that the Kingdom of *Portugal*, including that of *Algarve*, is not above one hundred and twenty Leagues in Length, and exceeds not forty in Breadth. 'Tis encompass'd on three Sides by the River *Minho*, the Ocean, and the *Guadiana*: the other Side which is that to the East, is made of three Provinces *Tras os Montes*, *Beira*, and *Alen-Tejo*, which lye most expos'd to Assaults. Nevertheless the Mountains between the Rivers *Minho* and *Duero*, do in some measure defend the first of these from the Danger of suddain Invasions; as the large and barren Plains of *Castile* and *Leon* do the second. As for *Alen-Tejo*, it is contain'd between the Rivers *Tajo* or *Tagus* and *Guadiana*, and is bounded by a line drawn from the one to the other, a League or two below the Towns of *Alcantara* and *Badajoz*. There are also some Places beyond the *Guadiana* in *Andalusia*, which are accounted to belong to this Province. 'Tis by this Province of *Alen-Tejo*, that the *Castilians* have generally made their Attempts on *Portugal*, as lying more open than any other: and for this reason

reason the *Portugueze* have ever us'd to fortify all the Passes thereof more or less, proportionably to the Exigence of their Affairs, or the Skill of Ingeneers.

This Kingdom is not every where well peopled; and the Plain of *Ourique*, for which the first Kings of *Portugal* were at so great an Expense of Blood, is now a desert Field. This Defect of Inhabitants, is occasion'd by the Neighbourhood of the Ocean, upon which, since the Discovery of the *Indies*, the Poor and the unfortunate, will rather run the Risque of long and tedious Voyages, than be constrain'd to go to the War. In order to restrain this prevailing Inclination, and to prevent the Land from lying desolate without cultivating, it hath been thought expedient both in *Spain* and *Partugal*, to Ordain, that every Honest Husbandman, should be rank'd in the degree of Gentlemen, and have the Title of an Esquire; and perceiving, moreover, that this was not yet sufficient to engage private Persons to manure the Ground, thereto was added Immunity from the War; and this, undoubtedly, had wrought the desir'd effect, provided the Necessities of the State, had not caus'd this Priviledge to be restricted to the Person of the First-born of a Family. This is the Cause of that general Desolation and want of Inhabitants in these two Kingdoms, where you may find more waste Grounds, than Men to labour them. Moreover the great Numbers of Monks, permitted in these Countries, conduce much to the Scarcity of People there. For many young Persons allur'd by the Liberty and Impunity of this kind of Men, after they have drown'd themselves in all kinds of criminal Debaucheries, betake themselves to a Convent

as to a Sanctuary, apparently relinquishing the World, but not their Wickedness: And thus many are diverted from Marriage.

The Scarcity of Horses in *Portugal*, might easily be remedied, by the help of some suitable Orders in this Matter. It hath been occasion'd by the great use of Mules for the Conveniency of Carriage, which Creatures gender not, and consequently cause a Penury of Horses. Hence have proceeded several excellent Regulations pertaining to the Cavalry, of which, as also of the Infantry, perhaps it won't be amiss to subjoin a Word or two. Each Captain of Horse is to answer for the Sufficiency of the Horses in his Troop: if they die on Service, the King is to pay for them, at a moderate Price. If the Captain furnishes others in their Stead, from the time that they received a mark upon their Ear, and a number on their Neck, and are enroll'd in the Muster-Master's Book, they bring a Crown a Month of Profit to their Owner; which Order is not without its Inconveniency.

The whole Cavalry of this Country is made up of Cuirassiers and Light Horsemen, that differ only in Dignity and in their Pay. The King supplies the Men with Bread, and their Horses with Barley and Straw, excepting in the Spring time, when they have Money allow'd them instead of their Forrage, that so they may put their Horses to the Grass, which brings them in good Case.

There are but few Regiments of Infantry kept on foot all the Year, but for the most part they are levied as occasion requires, being furnished with Bread all the time they are in Service; and both the one and the other are very prone

to

to desert. An exact Account of them tho' diverting enough, would be too tedious: wherefore I shall only say, that the Bread wherewith they are supply'd, is larger and better than that of other Countries; and that there is a certain order establish'd for furnishing them with Water, which is distributed to the Souldiers, as well when on a March, as when encamp'd; without this it would be impossible for them to subsist under such Violent Heats, in a Country where sometimes they march a whole Day without finding any Water.

Tho' these foot Souldiers, are generally brought by force into the Field, yet do they fight admirably well when once they are got there. At the Wings of their Battalions there are ordinarily four or five Rows of Musquetiers, whose Pieces resemble a small Arquebuss, and carry a Bullet of twelve in the Pound. In time these become very Skilful Souldiers, and supply the Army with Officers.

Amongst the *Portuguese*, Preferments are their chief Pay: a Captain of Foot, who receives no Pay, will be very well satisfied if he is rewarded with a Troop of light Horse; from which Post, according to his Desert or Interest, he passes, more or less swiftly, through the several Offices of a Captain of Cuirassiers, Commissary general, Colonel of Foot, Lieutenant General of Horse, General of the Artillery of a small Province, and then of a more considerable one; or if none of these Places are Vacant they are rewarded with Honorary Titles.

Besides all which, there are other Recompenses bestow'd, by the Kings of *Portugal*, upon such as have signaliz'd themselves in their Service;

sometimes also they reward them with Presents in Mony, when they please ; for which purpose there is an Office erected called *Mercez*, concerning which we shall have Occasion to speak elsewhere, as also of Commandries and other Favours of the Prince.

AND now we shall take a short View of the State of the Court and Army of *Spain*, whereby we may be enabled, to give a Judgment of the respective Abilities, of the *Castilian* and *Portuguese* Commanders.

About the End of the Year 1656, the *Spaniards* hearing of the Death of King *John IV.* to whom they gave only the Title of Duke of *Braganza*, perswaded themselves, that it would be an easy matter to subdue that rebellious Nobility, who presuming upon the Weakness of the Queen, and Inability of her Son, strove to enrich themselves, neglecting the defence of the Kingdom. King *Philip IV.* of *Spain*, abandoning himself to the Natural Inclination he had for Ease, did intirely commit the Care of all his Affairs to *Don Louis de Haro*, who in Favour and Merit deservedly succeeded the Count Duke *de Olivarez*. This chief Minister, in hopes to reduce the Rebels to their Duty to the King his Master, made great Preparations for War, and in the Spring of the Year 1657, sent into the Field an Army of 20000 Men, under the Command of *Don Francisco Tuttavilla* Duke of *St. Germain*. This *Neapolitan* General, who was a person of known Merit, and had yet been much more renown'd, had his Counsels been always followed, sat down before the Town of *Olivenza*, which he carried in less than a Month,

meet-

meeting but with small Opposition from *Emanuel de Saldanha* the Governour, who surrendered the Place, before the *Spaniards* had taken all the Outworks: At which the Queen Regent was so much incens'd, that she sent him to perpetual Banishment in the *Indies*. Upon this Occasion, it appear'd what an Hatred the *Portugueze* bore the *Spaniards*; for tho' by the Articles of surrender it was permitted the Former to remain still in the Town; yet they chose rather to quit both Houses and Goods, than own the latter for their Masters.

During this Siege, the *Portugueze* had gathered an Army, which was put under the Command of *Martino Alfonso de Mello* Count of *St. Lorenzo*. This General having brought his Army before the Lines of *Oliveza*, instead of immediately attacking the Besiegers, call'd a Council of War, wherein it was resolv'd to march the Night following in order to surprize the Town of *Badajoz*, a Place of Arms belonging to *Castile*, and plentifully provided in all things. Accordingly they left their Camp, and coming to the Town, they place their Ladders to the Walls, and gave the Assault in Broad Day. By the Loss of many of their Men, they were convinc'd too late of the folly of their Enterprize, which oblig'd them to retire. During the rest of this Campaign, nothing of Moment was done by the *Portugueze*, save the Retaking of *Mourao*, which had been taken by the Duke of *St. Germain* after the surrendering of *Oliveza*.

Tho' the *Portugueze* were sufficiently Sick of their former Attempt on *Badajoz*, yet they found themselves oblig'd on the earnest sollicitation

tion of the Count *de Cominges* the French Ambassador at their Court, to undertake the Siege thereof the following Year. Wherefore, in order thereto, in *June* 1658, they march'd with an Army of 16000 Foot and 5000 Horse, under the Command of *John Mendez de Vasconcellos*, who had formerly serv'd in the *Spanish* Troops in *Flanders*. *Badajoz* is a Town of about 4000 Inhabitants, situated on a rising Ground, upon the Banks of the *Guadiana*, on the Frontiers of *Andalusia*. Its Fortifications are old and inconsiderable; but it has two strong Forts built after the modern Manner, call'd *St. Michael* and *St. Christopher*, whereof the latter stands on an Hill on the other side of the River, near that Point of Land, form'd by the falling of the *Chevera* into the *Gaudiana*. Before this Fort the *Portuguese* Army sat down; but they made but very small Progress, because of the strength of the Place, and the frequent Relief it receiv'd, being also ignorant of the Method of carrying on a Siege. Notwithstanding by main Force they took a Part of the cover'd Way, which was as soon retaken by the *Castilians*, but with great loss of their Men.

By this time *Badajoz*, which at the Arrival of the *Portuguese* was but weakly garrison'd, was recruited with the Flower of the *Spanish* Troops; which yet hindred not *John Mendez* to rise from Fort *St. Christopher*, and lay Siege to the Town, about which, he drew a Line of Circumvallation, three Leagues in Compass, and therein imploy'd all his Men and Time, not considering that 'twas now too late, the Place being supply'd with all things, in a condition to sustain a long Siege, and upon occasion to give him Battel. The News

of

of this Siege, together with the Oversight of the Besiegers being brought to *Madrid*, *Don Louis de Haro*, resolv'd to come into the field himself, hoping to have the Honour of relieving the most considerable Town, in all the Frontiers, with no great Difficulty, because of the Aukwardness of the *Portugueze*. Whilst he is making his Preparations; the *Portugueze* attack'd the Fort *St. Michael*, which they carried after five Hours Resistance, constraining the Duke of *Ossonna* that defended it, to retire under the Cannon of the Town. About a Month after, the *Portugueze*, not yet desponding, erected a Battery on the Hill *del Viento*, designing to beat down a Retrenchment, where two thousand *Spanish* Foot, and a thousand Horse were posted: But all they could do with this Battery, and two Pieces more from Fort *St. Michael*, was to no Purpose. Wherefore they a second time, bent all their Thoughts and Forces against the Fort *St. Christopher*.

In this inconstant manner of acting, had the *Portugueze* already spent four Months, when they heard of the March of *Don Louis de Haro*; and now considering they had lost at the Siege more than half of their Men, the rest also being much haras'd by the violent Heats of the Summer, and the Fatigues and Sicknesses of the Autumn, they resolv'd to make an easie Retreat to *Elvas*, waiting no longer for express Orders from the Court, to raise the Siege, which they had formerly demanded in Vain, no Person either in City or Camp being willing to make the first Proposal.

Don Louis de Haro, parted from *Merida* the tenth of September with 12000 Foot, and 4500 Horse,

tion of the Count *de Cominges* the French Ambassador at their Court, to undertake the Siege thereof the following Year. Wherefore, in order thereto, in *June* 1658, they march'd with an Army of 16000 Foot and 5000 Horse, under the Command of *John Mendez de Vasconcellos*, who had formerly serv'd in the *Spanish* Troops in *Flanders*. *Badajoz* is a Town of about 4000 Inhabitants, situated on a rising Ground, upon the Banks of the *Guadiana*, on the Frontiers of *Andalusia*. Its Fortifications are old and inconsiderable; but it has two strong Forts built after the modern Manner, call'd *St. Michael* and *St. Christopher*, whereof the latter stands on an Hill on the other side of the River, near that Point of Land, form'd by the falling of the *Chevora* into the *Gaudiana*. Before this Fort the *Portuguese* Army sat down; but they made but very small Progress, because of the strength of the Place, and the frequent Relief it receiv'd, being also ignorant of the Method of carrying on a Siege. Notwithstanding by main Force they took a Part of the cover'd Way, which was as soon retaken by the *Castilians*, but with great loss of their Men.

By this time *Badajoz*, which at the Arrival of the *Portuguese* was but weakly garrison'd, was recruited with the Flower of the *Spanish* Troops; which yet hindred not *John Mendez* to rise from Fort *St. Christopher*, and lay Siege to the Town, about which, he drew a Line of Circumvallation, three Leagues in Compass, and therein imploy'd all his Men and Time, not considering that 'twas now too late, the Place being supply'd with all things, in a condition to sustain a long Siege, and upon occasion to give him Battel. The News
of

of this Siege, together with the Oversight of the Besiegers being brought to *Madrid*, *Don Louis de Haro*, resolv'd to come into the field himself, hoping to have the Honour of relieving the most considerable Town, in all the Frontiers, with no great Difficulty, because of the Aukwardness of the *Portugueze*. Whilst he is making his Preparations; the *Portugueze* attack'd the Fort *St. Michael*, which they carried after five Hours Resistance, constraining the Duke of *Ossonna* that defended it, to retire under the Cannon of the Town. About a Month after, the *Portugueze*, not yet desponding, erected a Battery on the Hill *del Viento*, designing to beat down a Retrenchment, where two thousand *Spanish* Foot, and a thousand Horse were posted: But all they could do with this Battery, and two Pieces more from Fort *St. Michael*, was to no Purpose. Wherefore they a second time, bent all their Thoughts and Forces against the Fort *St. Christopher*.

In this inconstant manner of acting, had the *Portugueze* already spent four Months, when they heard of the March of *Don Louis de Haro*; and now considering they had lost at the Siege more than half of their Men, the rest also being much harass'd by the violent Heats of the Summer, and the Fatigues and Sickneses of the Autumn, they resolv'd to make an easie Retreat to *Elvas*, waiting no longer for express Orders from the Court, to raise the Siege, which they had formerly demanded in Vain, no Person either in City or Camp being willing to make the first Proposal.

Don Louis de Haro, parted from *Merida* the tenth of *September* with 12000 Foot, and 4500 Horse,

Horse, accompanied with many Volunteers and Persons of Note. This great Minister was overjoyed, when he heard the *Portugueze* were gone from *Badajoz*, their Army being reduc'd to One Half, and those sick and much harass'd; and understanding that in this condition they had entred into *Elvas*, whereof all the Victuals and Ammunition had been spent before *Badajoz*, he resolv'd to besiege them there. Wherefore he sat down before *Elvas* on the 15 of *September*, not doubting, but he should carry the Place, at least by Famine, and give what Terms he pleas'd. And indeed Provisions were there extremely scarce; for which cause many sick and useless Persons were sent away. The Town of *Elvas* is situated on a Hill, which it intirely covers, and is moreover well fortified, and indifferently provided with all things necessary for Defence; and in a Word, the best and most important Place in *Portugal*, lying about three Leagues from *Badajoz*. *Don Louis* in the first place encamp'd by the Aqueducts, which he cut off, and then drawing his Line of Circumvallation, he continued the Siege till the 14 of *January*, of the year following 1659.

In the mean time the *Portugueze* had assembled an Army of 14 or 15000 Men, the Command whereof was given to *Antonio de Menezes*, Count of *Castagneda*, and *Marquess* of *Marialva*, one of the Deliverers of this Country: He was a Personage well shap'd, and of a comely Aspect, but of more Courage than Conduct. So soon as he was come within half a League of the *Castilian* Lines, he sent word to *Don Louis*, that to Morrow he would give him Battel; upon which the *Spaniards* continu'd all night in Arms, expecting,
the

the *Portugueze*, who not stirring from their place, tho' it was already broad day-light, the Duke of *St. Germain*, return'd with his Men to the Camp, being sufficiently fatigu'd, and perswaded that the Enemy durst not appear, in so much that they cry'd out, that this was such another Bravado as had been made at *Olivenza*. Having re-entred their Lines, *Don Juan Pacheco* was sent out with 500 Horse, who observing from Six in the Morning to Eight at Night, and perceiving no Appearance of a March, retir'd to their Quarters. Some time after they were gone, the *Portugueze* begun to March towards their Lines, and in the mean time a Fog arising, their Guides lost the Way, but so fortunately that before the Mist disappear'd, they were got to the Enemies Entrenchments; where not being expected, they found only the ordinary Guards, and entring on all sides without Resistance, they were in the middle of the Camp, before any made head against 'em: those who came to make Opposition, in that Confusion, were easily routed. Thus was this Place relieved without much Opposition from the *Spaniards*. The Duke of *St. Germain*, having rallyed a good part of his Army, made an orderly Retreat to *Badajoz*, which was three Leagues from thence, wherein he was wounded, as he stopt his flying Men, and sustain'd the Enemy. The *Portugueze* pursu'd not the *Castilians* beyond the Olive Gardens, which extended not above three quarters of a League without the Town: But all those who escap'd not to *Badajoz*, where either kill'd, or taken with the Baggage.

Amongst the Prisoners there were some general Officers, and Persons of Quality: But on the
the

the *Portugueze* side none of note were lost, save *Andreas de Albuquerque* General of the Horse, whose great Courage and noble Actions had given expectations, that he would soon equalize the Glory of his Ancestors.

This great Victory did not bring such Joy to the *Portugueze*, as might have been expected in such a Conjunction, which must be attributed to their Apprehensions of a Treaty of Peace, which began to be set on Foot at this time between *France* and *Spain*, whereof I shall now relate some Circumstances, in order to compleat that Representation of the two Nations which I have promised.

The *Castilians*, to excuse so shameful a Defeat, gave it out, that they had no Design to take *Elvas*, least otherwise they should have given Occasion to a Favourite to boast, that he had conquered the most Important Place of *Portugal*, and thereby have encreas'd his Authority, already too great and too absolute. The Creatures of *Don Louis*, yet more ridiculous than their Antagonists, published at *Madrid*, that the Presumption of the Rebel *Portugueze*, how extream soever, had not been able to hinder *Don Louis de Haro*, to make his escape with Deliberation. But the Marquess of *Marialva*, transported with Joy, order'd all the Prisoners of War, General Officers, Volunteers and others to be assembled; to whom he said, *That they might be convinc'd by their Overtbrow, that the Right was not on their side: But, added he, whatever may be your Thoughts in this matter, We give you all your Liberty; only remember, whenever you have a Mind to return to Portugal, that we know how to beat you and chase you hence. Adieu.*

This

This same General writing to his Wife, by an Express dispatch'd from the Court, did amplify this Relief of *Elvas* in very magnificent Terms, assuring her, ' That since the Foundation of the *Portuguese* Monarchy, they had never gain'd from the *Spaniards* so great and signal a Victory, or with less expense of Blood and Treasure. This Lady, as the rest of that Country, being very haughty, and affecting a stateliness on such Occasions, thought it sufficient for an Answer, to send a Letter with these Words at Bottom ; *If you had done less, I would never have seen you.*

After all these brave Actions that pass'd upon the Field of Battel were over, the Marquess of *Marialva* enter'd the Town, where he was receiv'd with all deserv'd Applause ; and that same Evening he neglected not to give all necessary Orders for the Army, that it might be ready to march against to Morrow, in order to reap some further Advantages from their Victory. Urged on by a Desire of Glory, he arose early in the Morning ; but was exceedingly surpriz'd, when going out of the Town, he understood that all his Troops were run away, every one being gone to his own Home ; and that the *Portuguese* had taken unto themselves that Liberty, which he had granted to the *Spaniards*. Yet has not this Example prevail'd with the *Portuguese*, to amend this Fault : for never were any less desirous to make Advantage of a Victory than they.

During the Remainder of the Year 1659, and all the following, neither did the *Portuguese* nor the *Castilians* take the Field : those, having lost the most part of their Old Infantry, at the Siege of *Badajoz* ; and these having fatigu'd themselves, and been severely mortified before *Elvas*. More-

over

over the *Spaniards* expected *Don Juan* of *Austria*, from *Flanders*, with *Veterane Troops* and *Experienced Commanders*, wherewith they hop'd to take their *Revenge*, and give a new *Face* to *Affairs*. Such was the State of the *Spaniards* and *Portugueze*, when they were to begin the Campaign of the Year 1661, under the Conduct of *Don John* of *Austria*, and *Frederick* Count of *Schomberg*,

The Count of *Schomberg*, having already spent two Months, in informing himself in the Affairs of *Portugal*, departed from *Lisbon* about the end of *January* 1661, to learn the Condition of the Towns and Garrisons, on the Frontiers of *Alentejo*. This Province that has its Name from its being beyond the River *Tajo* with respect to the rest of the Kingdom, had for Governour *Don Hieronimo de Ataida* Count de *Atougua*, who was a Person of much Honour, Discretion, and Bravery, Qualities inherent in the *Portugueze*. But the Vertue for which he was principally remarkable, was Uprightness, wherein he greatly excelled: For when he was Governour of *Brazil*, which furnish'd Sugar to most Parts of *Europe*, he caus'd that which was us'd in his own House be brought from *Lisbon*, that he might not be blam'd for requiring the same from all others under his Government. Hence it is, that in the Hall of *Bahia*, where the Pictures of the Governours are, he is represented with long Nails, whereby is signified the Eminency of his Condition.

This General, who had this also in common with others of his Country, to be unskill'd in the Art of War, and to have more of the Soldier than the Commander, went from *Elvas* attend-
ed

ed with the Garrison and Six Field-pieces, to wait on the Count of *Schomberg*, whom he met a League or two from that Place. It was in this Interview, that the Count might properly be said first to enter on the Exercise of his Office of Camp-Master General of the *Portuguese* Army. He appeared not to be at all surpris'd at the unusual Things he beheld ; but being indu'd with a great facility of acquiring and speaking the Languages, and free from the Incumbrance of great Affairs, he inform'd himself with ease in every thing, without the Help of an Interpreter; and gave his Advice as one vers'd in the things he spoke of, and of great Knowledge in the Interests of *Portugal*.

After the Count de *Atouguia* had shewed him the Towns of *Elvas*, *Campo-Mayor*, *Portalegre*, *Castel de Vide*, *Estremoz*, *Ebora*, *Serpa*, and others less considerable, whereof the Garrisons were in very bad condition, since the Siege of *Badajoz*, where the Choice of the *Portuguese* Infantry was lost; the Count of *Schomberg* having sufficiently inform'd himself in these Matters, went to give account of all to the Queen, and according to his Report and Advice, it was resolv'd, that *Estremoz*, *Serpa*, *Monfaraz*, and *Ebora*, should without delay be fortified. But as touching this last Place there were great Debates. The Count of *Schomberg* was of Opinion, that for saving of Time and Charges, it was enough to fortify the Convent of *St. Anthony*, which stands on an Hill adjoining to the Town-Walls; affirming that if five Bastions were made thereto, it would be sufficient to command the Town though very large, and to defend it from the Assaults of an Enemy. But this Advice was not followed, and

a Draught of the Out-works of the Place was design'd, in order to fortifie the whole.

About the middle of *March*, the Count of *Schomberg* return'd to the Frontiers, to observe more particularly the *Guadiana*. This River from *Merida* to *Mertola*, is full of Huge Fragments of Rocks, which as they render it unnavigable, so they make it of difficult and dangerous Passage, especially to People in Haft. The Water that remains therein in the Summer time, appears not so much to run, as to stagnate under these Rocks, and its Channel can't be more fitly compar'd, than to these gaping Hollownesses of the Earth made by Floods, where the Stones are left, that have, by the impetuous Torrent, been carried down from the Mountains. Wherefore it is not strange if this River is lost in the Earth above *Merida*; seeing far below it, where it is bigger, it disappears in Droughts, and even the little Insects, that creep from Stone to Stone, may pass over it without wetting themselves.

The Count of *Schomberg* having sufficiently view'd that River, and the Country thereabout; came to *Elvas*, to observe the Motions of the *Spaniards*. The Season was now well advanc'd, and the Heats were already very great, when hearing nothing of them, the *Portuguese* who easily perswade themselves of what they desire, flatter'd themselves with the Hopes, that their Enemies would not take the Field this Year: For they knew not that *Don John* of *Austria*, having arrived at *Safras* the 24th of *May*, had forthwith taken a Review of his Foot and Horse at *Truxillo*, and found the Train of Artillery, and all other necessary Provisions in very good Order.

Don

Don John of Austria, to whom was given the Command of the *Castilian* Army, was natural Son to *Philip IV.* This Prince, proud of his Birth, and puffed up with the Glory of having formerly reduc'd *Barcelona* and *Naples* under their Obedience to his Catholick Majesty, promis'd himself nothing less than the intire Conquest of *Portugal*, and the peaceable Possession of the Crown thereof, with Dependance on that of *Spain*. Because of these Thoughts, all his Actions and Enterprizes were perform'd with much Pomp and Ostentation. Hither he had come upon account of his Honour, that he might attempt some great Thing, to retrieve the Reputation he had lost at the Battel of *Dunkirk*: He was also but little belov'd of the King, at least in Appearance; and the Queen considering her Husband as a dying Man, and that her Son was but very Young, endeavour'd thenceforth to humble him. On the other side, this Prince had no great Regard for the Queen, and made mighty Complaints of the Ministers of State, alledging they were deficient in performing what was appointed them, for reducing of *Portugal*.

But to return: He parted from *Badajoz* on the 15th of *June*, with fifteen Batalions, consisting of about six thousand Foot, and five thousand Horse. That same Day, he went to view the Town of *Campo-Mayor*; but did not sit down before it, knowing, that expecting a Siege, it was sufficiently provided with all things necessary for Defence, In his March he caus'd them to raze two or three *Atalayas*, which are a kind of Redoubts, built by the *Portugueze* upon Hills along their Frontiers, for discovering Parties of the Enemies, and for a Retreat to their Cattle.

D

After

After this he took the small Town and Castle of *Ouguela*, upon the *Chevora*, about a League from *Campo-Mayor*; from whence he sent to invest *Aronches*, and to morrow in the Evening came himself before that Place.

This Town, which may contain about five hundred Inhabitants, is situated on a small River that comes from *Alegrette*. It is inclosed with only one old Wall, within which is a Castle of no Strength. Upon the 17th *Don John* caus'd batter the Place with four Pieces of Cannon; but the Besieged, finding their Walls unable to sustain the first Volley of Shot, surrendred upon Condition that they should have eight Days allow'd them to chuse, whether they would stay or remove. The Design of the *Spaniards* in taking this Town was to incommode *Portalegre*, and hinder its Communication with *Campo-Mayor*, and to open to themselves a large Entry unto *Portugal*; and therefore *Don John* resolv'd to fortify this Place and make it his Magazin of Arms. Whilst the Infantry were employ'd in this Work, *Don John* having receiv'd Advice, that the *Portugueze* Troops were dispers'd among the Garrisons, took a Resolution to go visit *Estremoz* with his Cavalry, knowing that the general Officers were there: Wherefore he presented himself before that Place, at the head of four thousand Horse: But finding he could not draw the *Portugueze* into the Field, he return'd by *Veyros* to which he sent a Summons by a Trumpet; and receiving no answer from them, he caus'd one of the Squadrons to alight, and put all to the edge of the Sword, but those who escap'd to the Castle, which he could not assault, having neither Cannon nor Infantry.

try. Thus all that was perform'd in this Expedition, was the Plundering and Burning of *Veyros*, with a great many Farms and Barns in the Country about, meeting with no Opposition; only as in a Bravado they pass'd under the Walls of *Monforte*, they were entertain'd with an unexpected Volley of Musquets.

When the *Portuguese* Commanders had understood the Way that *Don John* took, after he pass'd the *Guadiana* and the *Caya*, they quitted *Elvas*, and arriv'd at *Estremoz*, that same Day *Don John* came before *Aronches*: Where hearing that the Place was taken, and that the *Spaniards* were fortifying it, with a Resolution of keeping store of Victuals and Ammunition therein, they call'd a Council of War. The Count of *Schomberg* was of Opinion, That their most expedient Course was, to encamp themselves upon the *Caya*, between *Aronches* and *Campo-Mayor*: he demonstrated to the Count de *Atouguia*, That this being a most advantagious Post, it would be impossible for *Don John*, when the *Portuguese* were there, to send his Provisions, though guarded with a Part of his Army, without too much exposing 'em; that if he shou'd come with all his Army, he might endanger the loss of *Aronches*, the Fortifications whereof could not for a long time be made defensible; in a Word that by chusing this Camp, they should frustrate the *Spanish* Designs.

To this Advice, which might have been put in Execution without any Danger, no Reply was made: and tho' the general Officers, were for the most part convinc'd of its Importance; yet came not the Council to any Resolution, save only to send an Express to the Queen with an Account

of what had pass'd. The Advantages that might have been gain'd from acting according to this Opinion, were prevented by the Slowness and Irresolution of the Court : but when it came to be known abroad, the Sentiments of *Schomberg* were universally approv'd, and every one complain'd of the Injury was done him, in not following his Advice, when he had been sent for so far to give it. The Count of *Atouguia* was also openly blamed, for having committed a Fault, which could not be repair'd ; and about the end of the Campaign, he was on that account recall'd by the Queen ; for which afterwards he found the means to take a sufficient Revenge. But we'll return to what pass'd at *Estremoz*.

The Count of *Schomberg*, being nothing discourag'd by the slighting his Advice, got them with much Difficulty, to agree immediately to assemble all their Forces at *Estremoz*, and tho' they could not make up above ten thousand Men, yet he prevail'd with them, with this small Body, to begin their March to *Aronches* upon the 28th of *July*. When they were now come within a League of the Place, they had Intelligence from a Party of forty Horse sent out to make Discoveries, that *Don John* was retired. For having march'd for some days, he pass'd over the *Chevora*, and afterwards disperfed his Men, sending them into Quarters for Refreshment. The *Portuguese* being come near the Town, a Party was sent from thence to Skirmish, and there was great firing on either Side, till being repuls'd, they were forc'd to retire. This Place was well provided of all thing ; the Fortifications were regular, but not lined ; and therein had been left a Garrison sufficient to defend it.

After

After they had remain'd there for some Days, they remov'd their Camp, and fate down between *Elvas* and *Badajoz*; where nothing of moment happened, during the eight days they continu'd there, but a Conflict before the Gates of *Badajoz*, in which the Count de *Schomberg* in person, drove the *Castilians* to their Bridge. In the Retreat, *Don Juan Pacheco*, the Lieutenant General, was kill'd; having been but lately married to one of the handsomest Women in *Spain*, who but the day before was come to see him.

The News, that the *Spanish* Army was sent into Quarters, being now sufficiently confirm'd, the *Portugeze* Troops were also dispers'd, and especially into such Towns as they design'd to fortifie, where they arriv'd about the middle of *August*. But before their departure, they had testify'd their Joy upon receiving the glad Tidings of the Marriage concluded and signed the 23d of *June*, between the *Infanta* of *Portugal* and the King of *England*. Amongst other Conditions of this Treaty, his *Britannick* Majesty had oblig'd himself immediately to send into *Portugal* 3000 Foot and 1000 Horse, and also eight Frigats to cruise upon their Coasts all the Summer, with Orders to assist the *Portugueze* in their Occasions. The Count of *Schomberg* had more reason than others to rejoice for that Marriage, as being a Business wherein he had been very instrumental. When he came over into *England* from *Holland*, in order to embark for *Portugal*, he had several Conferences with Chancellor *Hyde*, and afterwards with the King himself to whom he propos'd this Match; and when he arriv'd at *Portugal*, this was one of the first Matters he communicated to the Queen, which she also greatly approved.

Of this Negociation I shall speak, after I have declar'd in what manner the *Portugueze* us'd formerly to make War, before the Coming of the Count of *Schomberg*.

Forasmuch, therefore, as the War, in succeeding Campaigns, was much more brisk than it had been in this, the Count of *Schomberg* having not a little contributed thereto by a Change in their Martial Discipline, I hold my self oblig'd to give some account hereof. We must know, then, that formerly, after a place was pitch'd upon for encamping of their Army, the *Portugueze* Quater-Masters, every one according to their Seniority, chose some convenient Post, where to encamp that Body to which they belong'd, which was ordinarily in places where there were Houses, Trees, or Fountains, or near some Rivulet, never minding whether they were near unto the rest, or in a condition to assist one another. On the morrow each Batalion or Squadron march'd to the adjacent Place of Rendezvous, where was the Camp-Master-General, who gave orders for the March of the Day, to the Officers of the Horse and Foot, and appointed how the Squadrons and Battalions should take their Turns. This often gave occasion to sharp Contests who should have the Vanguard, insomuch that before each had produc'd his Reasons, and the Camp-Master could put an end to the Debate, more time was spent, than might have suffic'd them to march to their intended Camp, where for their own advantage, they ought always to have been before Noon, to shun the excessive Heats.

To prevent these Inconveniencies for the Future, and for the greater security of his Troops against the Attacks of the Enemy, whether in the Camp,
or

or on a March, the Count of *Schomberg* resolv'd to make them incamp in order of Battel. The *Portugueze* by reason of their Inexperience, found herein, at first, much Difficulty ; and the Count was not a little fatigu'd, being oblig'd to mark out the Ground for the Batalions, and even the Distances between the Companies. They were no less surpriz'd with the manner of their March, which was in the same order wherein they lay encamp'd ; the two lines of the Camp, beginning, one Day, to march by the right Hand in two Columns, and the next day by the left, doing thus by Turns alternatively, unless on some extraordinary Occasion. The *Portugueze* after they were once inur'd to this Way of Marching, found it by far the most safe ; seeing how near soever the Enemy might be, they were not in any hazard of being surpriz'd, being always in battel Array, and ready without further trouble to receive the Enemy on any side ; which is a mighty Advantage to new levied Troops and to Militia. Henceforth their Armies march'd, with much less trouble to the Field-Marsbals than formerly.

Neither were the *Portugueze* at this time, any better Skill'd in Fortifications, than in the Marching and Encampments of Armies, as appear'd in the Design they had to fortify *Lisbon*: for intending to comprehend both City and Suburbs in one Inclosure, they got an Engineer to design a Model of Twenty seven or twenty eight large Bastions, according to which they went on to mark out their Work, without ever considering where they might meet, on a Plain or on a Declivity, or any regard to the Inequality of the Ground ; and which was yet more admirable, all this had the general Approbation. But after that

Forreigners had been call'd to the Assistance of the *Portugueze* in their Wars, being asham'd of a Work so ill contriv'd, they gave it over. They have been also oblig'd to Strangers for discovering to 'em, and delivering them from many grossly erroneous Fancies; such as that of King *Sebastian's* being still alive, and that he would come to their Assistance when they should be in their greatest Extremities. There were also several Persons of good Repute, who would give Goods upon Trust, and lend Money to such as would oblige themselves to return the Double Value when *Don Sebastian* should come. This *Sebastain* was one of their Kings, who having undertaken an Expedition into *Africa*, was kill'd at the Battel of *Alcaar*, in 1578, being twenty five Years of Age.

The two Armies being sent into Quarter, both *Lisbon* and *Madrid* testify'd their Joy thereat. The *Portuguze*, who had apprehended, that the *Spaniards* being now delivered from the trouble of the *French*, would the very first Campaign tear their Realm to Pieces, were overjoy'd to find them rest satisfy'd with taking of a paltry Town; for they made no Reckoning of all these Fortifications of Earth, wherewith the *Castilians* endeavour'd to magnify their Conquest. On the other side *Don John's* Faction at *Madrid*, endeavouring to strengthen their Party, publish'd with much Ostentation, That this Prince having taken by force the important Town of *Aronches*, had made it a Magazin of Arms in order to compleat the Conquest of *Portugal*; and to make it absolutely impregnable, had not only repair'd the Breaches, but had also added five Bastions, and four half Moons, a large Moat, forty foot in breadth, and twenty in Depth, with a covered Way upon

on the Counterscarp: that the *Portugueze* were so much alarm'd thereat, that they had wasted their Men and spent their Mony, in putting the Places thereabout in a Condition to defend themselves from it. The ignorant People joyfully entertain'd themselves with these Vanities; but those of more clear understanding, deplored these Evils, which they saw were presag'd by such vain Boastings. The Death of *Don Louis de Haro*, and the new Favour of the Duke of *Medina de las Torres*, did now so intirely take up the Court, that there was hardly any place for the thoughts of forreign Affairs. The ill estate of the King's Health, his Age, and extreme Weakness, gave occasion to great Troubles. Among all the other Factions at Court, that of the Duke of *Medina* was now become the Principal, who by Advices from *England*, *Holland* and *France*, understood what Designs were on Foot for the Assistance and Defence of *Portugal*.

King *Philip* and his Council having learnt the Certainty of those Reports, resolve to employ all their Powers, in order to reduce *Portugal* under their Obedience, either altogether or for the most part, before these forreign Aids could Joyn, in its defence: to oppose which, their Forces in *Flanders*, in *Milan* and in *Naples* were call'd home, and Commissions and Mony were distributed, for raising new Troops in *Germany*. But all these great Designs were defeated at once by the Conspiracy of the Marquess *de Liche*.

Don Louis de Haro, dying some Months after Cardinal *Mazarine*, it was thought that the Marquess *de Liche* his Son was highly incens'd, because he was not treated suitably to what he believ'd he deserv'd, but was depriv'd of his Government;

Government; upon which account he resolv'd to cut off the King, when at the Play, together with the Faction now in Favour: but the Marquess's Valet de Chamber having made a discovery of all to the Duke of *Medina de las Torres*, who was now become chief Minister of State, and prime Favourite of the King, the Marquess was immediately apprehended, and his Papers seiz'd together with his Mony, which amounted to vast Sums: for besides that his Father had been long in Favour, he had also succeeded to the Goods of the Count Duke of *Olivarez* his Predecessor; all which descended to the Marquess as eldest Son. It was also commonly reported among the People, who are generally upon extremes in their Estimate, that the Marquess's Mother had lent five Millions of Livers to *Portugal*. These Troubles serv'd for a Pretence to the Ministers of State whereby they excus'd themselves to *Don John*, who complain'd that they had not made such Preparations for the ensuing Campaign, as they might, and had promis'd him to do.

As the Court at *Madrid* was threatned with great Evils by reason of the Craziness of their King, that of *Portugal* was yet in much greater Danger from the Savage Humour of *Don Alfonso*, whom his Mother had us'd, either with too much or too little Indulgence, as will readily appear from the Summary of his Life, which I shall be oblig'd to give, seeing he is the principal Subject of this History.

Don Alfonso XVI. was born at *Villa Viciosa*, upon the 16th of *August*, in the Year 1643. When he was about three or four Years of Age, he was taken with a Fever of so malignant a Nature, that the Physicians despair'd of his Recovery,

ry, without losing the Use of his Limbs, and possibly also of his Judgment in great Measure. The Queen, who then had no Children besides but Prince *Theodosius*, most earnestly desired to save his Life, cost what it would; which accordingly was done by means of frequent Bleedings: but he remain'd lame of the right Side, with a Spirit also much less capable of Reason, than all Extravagant Passions. The Air, the Water, and the Food of this Country, do soon repair the Strength, insomuch that in some small time this Prince was in a state wherein he might receive Instruction. His Preceptor was *Nicholas Monteiro*, a Man worthy of that Employ; but such were the intractable Inclinations of *Don Alfonso*, that they were inconsistent with any Lessons; and there being a Necessity to bear with him because of his Infirmities, this Remissness increas'd his Indocility; insomuch that after the Death of Prince *Theodosius*, his elder Brother in 1653, he became in a manner ungovernable. It was upon this consideration, that when the States were assembled, according to Custom, to acknowledge the apparent Heir of the Crown, some of them were absolutely for preferring *Don Pedro* his younger Brother born April 26, 1648, being a Child about four or five years old: but this Opinion prevail'd not, and *Don Alfonso* was declared Prince, for so, in this Country, they call the Apparent Heir of the Crown. From this time forth the Prince harkened not to the Instructions either of his Masters, or of the King and Queen, who through a parental Tenderness, were of Opinion, that a severe Education would be unsuitable to the Weakness of his Youth, and that time as it added strength

strength to his Body, would sweeten his Spirit; wherein they were extremely mistaken.

This License was increas'd by the Death of the King his Father: Neither could the Regard and Fear he should have had for the Queen his Mother, who was Regent of the Realm, be of any force to Restrain him from living after his own Fancy. This Princess, tho' much taken up with the Government, was not Ignorant of her Son's Deportment: But she had intrusted his Education to *Don Francisco de Faro* Count of *Odemira*, who by his overmuch Diligence and Severity, prov'd innocently the Cause of all the Evils that afterwards happened. This Noble Man never permitted the King to be out of his sight, but from Dinner to four or five in the Evening, which time the *Portugueze* use to spend in Sleeping; instead of which *Don Alfonso* pass'd these hours in the Galleries that encompass'd the Court of the Chappel. This Court, which is the principal Entry to the Palace, is a Square surrounded on all sides with large *Portico's*, with Shops on the inner side: 'Tis much frequented at all times, save in these Hours I mention'd, when the scorching Heat of the Sun, keeps all within Doors. Here the Children who feel neither Heat nor Cold, when together, choose this time to divert themselves, when neither Parents nor Masters require any thing of them. *Don Alfonso*, for want of better Recreation, employed himself in beholding them from the Windows, throwing one at another: And as it is usual for a spectator to favour one side, it fell out that *Anthony de Conti* the Son of a certain Merchant in that Court, chanced ever to be of that Party which was favoured by the King; who

who thereupon took a liking for him, and would come down alone, unknown to those about him, and talk with him in the Court. *De Conti*, in acknowledgment of this Favour, often reiterated by the King, presented him with Slings of Silk, little gilded Knives, and other such Trifles as Children use to admire: for indeed, tho' *Don Alfonso* was already fourteen years of Age, yet in his Inclinations he was a very Child. By this means, *De Conti* grew into great Familiarity with the King; which coming to the Queen's Knowledge, she discharged him from entering into the Palace. The King being inrag'd at this, sought after *De Conti* with much more Eagerness than before, and saw him as often, but with greater Caution. Wherefore perceiving their Prohibitions in Vain, *Conti* was again permitted free Access, believing that by this means their Affection might be diminished; but it produc'd a quite contrary Effect.

The King being now of a convenient Age to Learn Horsemanship, that Province was committed to *Don Francisco de Sousa*, Count of *Prado*, his Master of the Horse. But instead of taking Pleasure in these princely Exercises, *Don Alfonso* brought with him into the Riding-House together with his Favourite, his Brother *John de Conti* and a great many *Negro's* and *Mulatto's*, to whom he join'd himself, without ever considering, That 'tis only the despicable Mob that please themselves in playing at Fisticuffs, and in smutty Discourse. And therefore it was, that the Count of *Odemira*, drove one Day all these pitiful Wretches from the Palace, and absolutely prohibited *De Conti* ever again to set his foot therein.

No

No sooner was it known at Court, that the King hated his Governour as much as he lov'd *De Conti*, but some adventur'd to tell him, That it was unbecoming a Prince, to be rul'd by the Sentiments of another, and that to prescribe to Kings what was contrary to their Inclination, was to trample on their Sovereignty. *Don Alfonso* so greatly approv'd of this Discourse, that he resolv'd he would not do any thing, nay not so much as to eat or drink, till *De Conti* was permitted to come to him; whereupon they were constrain'd to allow them to come together, and to live as they pleas'd. No sooner did the Exercises of the Academy again begin, but therein were to be seen fightings of Bull Dogs; and this Licence increas'ing, these Animals were let loose in the great Court of the Palace, where they made great Confusion: Slingers also were multiply'd and to be seen every where; so that here was a lively image of War, all the most bloudy spectacles being those wherein the King took most Delight.

In order to make some advantage of this Mad Fighting humour of *Don Alfonso*, he had a Fencing-Master assign'd him, who was *Diego Gomez de Figueredo*, a man of great Address in his Art; wherein the King made but small Progress, delighting rather to use Force than Skill. Besides the Assaults that were made before him, he took great Pleasure in seeing them throw Daggers at one another; and when any chanc'd to be hurt, as often fell out, he would fall a laughing, but never do any Justice to the injured. In the Mean time the *Infant* was educated in the Queen's Appartment, where he might have receiv'd much benefit by the Instructions

structions were given him, had he not been interrupted by his elder Brother, who came on purpose to talk with him about his Diversions, or to quarrel with him about Toys, whereby he lost his time.

The King being now arriv'd at sixteen years of Age, *Anthony de Conti* seem'd now to be absolutely establish'd in his Favour. He boasted himself to be descended of the illustrious Family of *Ventimiglia*, in *Sicily*, tho' at the same time, the ground of all his pretensions was only this; that he was originally of a City of that name in the Republick of *Genoa*.

The Queen perceiving that her Son's Governour had now no more Authority over him, was resolv'd to appoint him an Appartment by himself, whereby he might be less expos'd to the Access of the Rabble, who had miserably depriv'd his manners. These whom she had ordered to wait upon him were, *Don Juan de Sylva* Marquess of *Govea*, high Steward of the King's Household, *Garcia de Mello* his Great Chamberlain, the Count *de Prado* Master of the Horse, and in his absence when he went to command the Army, *Don Diego de Lima* Viscount of *Villa Nova de Acerveira*, *Don Juan de Almeida* Master of the Wardrobe, *Louis de Mello* Captain of the Guards, *Louis de Vasconcellos*, and *Sousa* Count of *Castelmelhor* first Gentleman of the Bedchamber. These Persons of Quality were to wait each their Week, and he who was in Waiting was to lye in the King's Antichamber with his Head against the Door. These were to be reliev'd in the Day time by *Don Vasco Mascaregnas* Count *de Obidos*, *Nuno de Mendoza* Count *de Valdereyes*, *Louis de Silva Tello* Count *de Aveiras*,
and

and *Franisco Susa Coutinho* Counsellor of State, who had been Ambassador at *Rome*, in *France*, in *Holland*, and in *Sweden*; his Place was to be supply'd by *Don Pedro de Castelbranco* Count de *Pombyro* Captain of the Guard. Each of these Lords were to have a Key that opened all the Doors: but all were to be under the Command of the Count de *Odemira*.

This Project was put in Execution on the seventh of *April* in the year 1660; but from that day forward the King would never pass through the Antichamber, where all the honourable Nobles of his Realm waited for him, but chose rather to enter by the Guard-Hall that was full of the meaner sort of People. Notwithstanding, he was for some Days depriv'd of the Company of *de Conti*; yet even then he would make Signs to him from his Window, and those of his Cabal.

In the mean time the King, who took a Pleasure in mounting the most unruly Horses, was much more oblig'd to his good Fortune than to his Skill in Riding, therein using so little Care or Circumspection, that it seem'd as if he had rather a Design to Kill than to Divert himself. One Day, after he had pass'd the *Tajo* in a Boat over against *Alcantara*, unknown to all his Attendants, he provok'd a Bull, which goaring his Horse, he run away with him, and threw him on the Ground, so bruis'd, that had he not been let Blood four or five times, he had undoubtedly lost his Life. Returning one Evening to *Lisbon*, he descry'd two Citizens a Horseback, at whom he spurr'd on his Horse at all his Speed, designing to run them down; but missing his Aim, he drew his Sword, and would have done 'em Mischief, had not the coming in of the
Great

Great Huntsman prevented it. Another time about the beginning of the Night, as he was waiting for Lights to see some Mastiffs that were at the Monastery of the Jesuits, he alighted from his Horse, and tho' in his Boots, wandred about the Streets, where meeting three Men, he assaulted 'em with his Sword in hand, who defending themselves, one of 'em not knowing him, gave him a Blow on the Groin that laid him on the Ground. Such unaccountable Actions as these, so unworthy of a King, oblig'd the Queen and Council of State to cause remonstrate to him, That for the future he ought to take more care of his own Safety and of his Realm, than he had formerly done. The Person they chose to employ herein was *Don Nuno Alvarez Pereira* the Duke of *Cadaval*, Marquess of *Fercira*, Count of *Tentugal*, and afterwards Steward to the Queen. But all that could be said to him, was altogether insignificant to stop the impetuous Course of his Youth.

The Nobleman whose Week it was to attend, never went to Supper, till the King was a Bed : *Don Alfonso* took the Opportunity of this time to arm himself from Head to Foot, and passing out by the Garden, with the two *Conti's* and some more *Bravo's*, he would ramble about all night, as the most debauch'd of the Town, and entring into the Houses of loose Women, would carry the Prostitutes into the Palace, boasting of his Excellency in such sort of Diversions; upon which very account it was, that People began to entertain suspicions of his Inability. All these Adventures were attended with unlucky Accidents, which the next day after became the Common Entertainment of the Town: and it was

in one of these Rencounters that his Pistol misgave, being levell'd at *Martino Correo de Sa*, Viscount of *Asseca*.

The Queen, thinking to divert him from such Courses by Business, caus'd him be present at publick Audiences, and to assist in Council : but his Favourites soon made him weary of these Occupations, and having caus'd him quit his Apartment, perswaded him to give *De Conti* one in the Palace, which might have communication with his own; after which he made him a Knight of the *Order of Christ*, and one of his Household, and gave him a Country-House, and a Commandry, with other Offices and Favours, bestowing also a Benefice upon his Brother. And from this time forth, every one made Court to *De Conti*, even the Queen her self having Recourse to him. At another time the King being gone to *Obidos* for the Baths, instead of using them, he imploy'd himself in such Lewd, Insolent and Cruel Practices, that the People every where fled, hiding themselves from him. In a word, the Count of *Odemira*, dying about the middle of *March* this Year, for whom he had still reserv'd some consideration, he abandon'd himself intirely to his Irregularities.

To alleviate in some sort the sensible Displeasures, given her by the Extravagancies of *Don Alphonso*, the Queen had entertain'd in her Mind three important Designs. One was the Marriage of the *Infanta* her Daughter : Another was to declare the *Infant*, *Don Pedro*, Prince, and if Circumstances should favour, to put him in his Brother's Place : and the last was to leave the Court, and end her Days in Retirement. She communicated her Thoughts herein to her Council; but seeing that of her Daughter's Marriage was the most urgent of the three, and was of most importance to the

the safety of the Kingdom, I believe it won't be amiss to give account, how that Affair was brought about.

The *Portugueze* understanding that the *English* had invited home their King, they sent *Francisco de Mello de Torrez*, Count *de Ponte*, and afterwards Marquess of *Sandes*, in quality of Extraordinary Ambassador to congratulate his Return, and the Queen gave him in Charge to confer with Chancellor *Hyde*, and to engage him to dispose the King his Master to espouse the *Infanta* of *Portugal*.

At this time *France* had in a manner abandon'd the *Portugueze*, having also signally affronted the Count *de Soure* their Ambassador, at his departure from *Havre-de-Grace*; insomuch that it seem'd the most expedient Course for *Portugal* to enter into a strict Alliance with *England*. The *Portugueze* in this conjuncture rightly consider'd, That a banish'd King returning to take possession of his Dominions, would have need of Mony, to reward such as had done him service; with which if they would supply him, it would be easy for him to assist them with Men and Ships. Wherefore the Marquess of *Sandes* propos'd to the King to marry the *Infanta* of *Portugal*, putting him in hopes of some Millions of Mony with her; and he so manag'd matters, that by the means of Chancellor *Hyde*, he perswaded the King, in Spite of all the opposition of the *Spaniards*. King *Charles*, therefore, declar'd to his Parliament; That after having advis'd with his Privy-Council, he had come to a Conclusion with his Chancellor and the Marquess *de Sandes* to espouse the *Infanta* of *Portugal*. After this the Chancellor represented at great length, That the *Portugueze* upon his Maje-

ties Return, had demanded to renew their Alliance, but that his Majesty had refused it, however, advantageous it might be for *England*, till such time as he had the Advice of his Parliament, what he should do as to the 10000 Men, that had been promised them by the Usurper: that to grant that Aid, would make a Breach with *Spain*; and to refuse it would ruin the Commerce with *Portugal*, and also occasion the Destruction of that Kingdom. The Ambassadors of *Portugal* hearing of this Speech, and fearing what might be the Sequel, came with new Offers. The *Spaniard*, for his Part proffer'd to give as much as *Portugal*, if King *Charles* would Marry a Protestant Princess: and that if neither a Daughter of *Saxony* nor of *Denmark* would please him, he might have the Princess of *Orange*, upon the same Conditions that formerly he had desir'd: or he might have the Princess of *Parma*, to whom the King of *Spain* upon that very account had given a considerable Dowry: but if his Majesty in lieu of Money, would rather have something else, that might be more for his conveniency, he needed but explain his Mind, and he should receive that Satisfaction, which could not be afforded by the *Portuguese*. This Matter was debated in the King's Council, where it was agreed, that seeing the *Spaniards* would undoubtedly fail in their Promises touching the Marriage, it was most expedient to embrace the Proposals of *Portugal*, who with the *Infanta* would give the Town of *Tangier* in *Africk*, and that of *Bombay* in the *East-Indies*, with three Millions of Livres, and Jewels to a great value.

The *Spaniards* were at a loss to find the Cause, why the King of *England* should deal better by the
the

the Allies of *Cromwell*, than those who had receiv'd and protect'd him against his Tyranny, and ascrib'd the Success of that Negociation, to the Subtilty of the *French*, who took this indirect Method to assist *Portugal*. 'Tis certain, however, that the Superintendant *Fouquet*, who then was chief Minister, under colour of dealing for a great Quantity of Lead, caus'd advise his *Britannick* Majesty to this Marriage. Those who with impartial Eyes look'd on these Intrigues, could not but admire, that a Protestant Chancellor should perswade the King his Master to espouse a Catholick Princess, when at the same time a Catholick King propos'd to that Prince a Protestant Consort.

The King of *England* having sign'd the Marriage on the 23d of *June*, and agreed to espouse the *Infanta Catherine* next Spring, to testify the regard he had for the Interest of her Country, became Mediator of the Differences between the *Portuguese* and *Hollanders* touching the Business of *Brasil*, which was thus. The *Hollanders* having taken from the *Portuguese* the Coast of *Brasil*, were outed thereof by the same *Portuguese*: but the *Hollanders* having been at great Charges thereby, they demanded either to be restor'd thereto, or to be reimburs'd. The *Portuguese* rejected the Proposition as unjust; yet were willing to purchase a Peace: and this was effected by his *Britannick* Majesty, assisted by the Ministers of *France*, a Peace being concluded upon the 6th of *August* this Year, consisting of 26 Articles.

While these things past in *England*, and the Ministers of State of *Portugal* were deliberating upon the Queen's design'd Retreat, The Count of *Schomberg*, having been two Months at *Lisbon*, returned to the Frontiers in the end of *November*.

During his Stay he had given an Account of his Campaign, and did so represent the Advantages, that would accrue to the Realm, were he entrusted with the chief Command of the Army, that the Queen put him in Expectation thereof the next Campaign: but the Troubles of the Court came to such a height, that it was not possible she could keep her Word. In the mean time the Count of *Schomberg*, was busied in hastening on the Fortifications, especially those of *Ebora*, *Gerumenha* and *Estremoz*, and in visiting the Garrisons, and endeavouring to prevent the Desertion of the Forreign Soldiers, which was very frequent, by punishing some for Examples: also he caus'd shoot a reform'd Officer for having Intelligence with *Don John of Austria*.

The *Guadiana* being now greatly swell'd by the Rains of the Autumn, the *Spaniards* took this opportunity to besiege the Castle of *Alconchel*, which was kept by the *Portuguese*, tho' it was on the *Spanish* Ground: but as there were but few People in it, it was yielded without Resistance.

As for the Province of *Beira*, the Duke of *Ossonna* who commanded the *Castilian* Troops about *Ciudad-Rodrigo*, took a little Fort, wherein were only twelve Men and one piece of Cannon, with which they were to give notice when any Parties were seen in the Field. Had either the one or the other Party perform'd things more considerable, I would have pass'd over such small Matters with a Word or two; but considering the taking of this Sconce was the Work of one whole Campaign, It was but fitting I should give an account thereof.

In the Beginning of this Year the Marquess of *Marialva*, came to *Estremoz* to succeed the Count
de

de Atouguia: He forthwith apply'd himself to hasten the Fortifications of that Place, and the Count of *Schomberg* not only went, as he did, several times a day to view the Works, but also engag'd that General often to send out Parties. Being inform'd one day that the Garrison of *Aronches* us'd sometimes to march out, they sent a Party on the 23d of *January*, which having drawn them into the Field, set upon them and took many Prisoners, losing only one Reform'd Captain in the Action. About 12 or 15 days after, they set upon the Rear of a Convoy going to *Aronches*, but could not entirely defeat it, not being able to Join them, till under the Cannon of the Town.

About the Beginning of *April*, the Count of *Schomberg* resolving to attack a great Convoy, passing under Covert of the *Guadiana* from *Merida* to *Badajoz*, departed in the Evening with fifteen hundred Horse, and crossing the *Chevora* between *Ouguela* and *Badajoz*, he came up with them near *Talavera*: it consisted of 150 Waggon's loaden with Arms, Ammunition, and Cloth, guarded by ten Squadrons of Horse, and some Foot which disputed the Passage of the *Guadiana* being here difficult: yet they could not stop the *Portuguese*, nor hinder them, to disperse the *Castilian* Horse; which done they plunder'd the Waggon's and set fire to the Powder. Hearing of this Encounter, *Don Louis Podrigo* issu'd forth of *Badajoz* with the Garrison which now was very strong; but he came too late, the *Portuguese* having already past the *Chevora*, before he began to appear.

Some days after this, the *Portuguese* having Advice that *Don John* was assembling his Army, it mightily increas'd the Desire of the Marquess of *Marialva*, to be first in the Field. Several Coun-

During his Stay he had given an Account of his Campaign, and did so represent the Advantages, that would accrue to the Realm, were he entrusted with the chief Command of the Army, that the Queen put him in Expectation thereof the next Campaign: but the Troubles of the Court came to such a height, that it was not possible she could keep her Word. In the mean time the Count of *Schomberg*, was busied in hastening on the Fortifications, especially those of *Ebora*, *Gerumenba* and *Estremoz*, and in visiting the Garrisons, and endeavouring to prevent the Desertion of the Forreign Soldiers, which was very frequent, by punishing some for Examples: also he caus'd shoot a reform'd Officer for having Intelligence with *Don John of Austria*.

The *Guadiana* being now greatly swell'd by the Rains of the Autumn, the *Spaniards* took this opportunity to besiege the Castle of *Alconchel*, which was kept by the *Portuguese*, tho' it was on the *Spanish* Ground: but as there were but few People in it, it was yielded without Resistance.

As for the Province of *Beira*, the Duke of *Ossonna* who commanded the *Castilian* Troops about *Ciudad-Rodrigo*, took a little Fort, wherein were only twelve Men and one piece of Cannon, with which they were to give notice when any Parties were seen in the Field. Had either the one or the other Party perform'd things more considerable, I would have pass'd over such small Matters with a Word or two; but considering the taking of this Sconce was the Work of one whole Campaign, It was but fitting I should give an account thereof.

In the Beginning of this Year the Marquess of *Marialva*, came to *Estremoz* to succeed the Count
de

de Atouguia: He forthwith apply'd himself to hasten the Fortifications of that Place, and the Count of *Schomberg* not only went, as he did, several times a day to view the Works, but also engag'd that General often to send out Parties. Being inform'd one day that the Garrison of *Aronches* us'd sometimes to march out, they sent a Party on the 23d of *January*, which having drawn them into the Field, set upon them and took many Prisoners, losing only one Reform'd Captain in the Action. About 12 or 15 days after, they set upon the Rear of a Convoy going to *Aronches*, but could not entirely defeat it, not being able to Join them, till under the Cannon of the Town.

About the Beginning of *April*, the Count of *Schomberg* resolving to attack a great Convoy, passing under Covert of the *Guadiana* from *Merida* to *Badajoz*, departed in the Evening with fifteen hundred Horse, and crossing the *Chevora* between *Ouguela* and *Badajoz*, he came up with them near *Talavera*: it consisted of 150 Waggons loaden with Arms, Ammunition, and Cloth, guarded by ten Squadrons of Horse, and some Foot which disputed the Passage of the *Guadiana* being here difficult: yet they could not stop the *Portuguese*, nor hinder them, to disperse the *Castilian* Horse; which done they plunder'd the Waggons and set fire to the Powder. Hearing of this Encounter, *Don Louis Podrigo* issu'd forth of *Badajoz* with the Garrison which now was very strong; but he came too late, the *Portuguese* having already past the *Chevora*, before he began to appear.

Some days after this, the *Portuguese* having Advice that *Don John* was assembling his Army, it mightily encreas'd the Desire of the Marquess of *Marialva*, to be first in the Field. Several Coun-

cils of War had been already held on this Subject, without coming to any Resolution : but this day it was determin'd to get together the Forces thereabouts, and with them, to Join those that were at *Elvas*, all which together could not make at most above 2500 Horse, and 55000 Foot : With these the Marquess of *Marialva* march'd the 29th of *April* to meet *Don John* of *Austria*, notwithstanding of all could be alledg'd by the Count of *Schomberg* to the Contrary.

Two or three days after, the *Spanish* Forces that were in and about *Talavera*, march'd to *Badajoz*, with Victuals, Ammunition and all other Necessaries, and next day passing the River by the Bridge, they stretch'd themselves from the Fort *St. Christopher*, to the Angle of the *Caya*, a little River, which coming from *Alegrette*, and running by *Aronches* and *Campo-Mayor*, falls into the *Guadiana* between *Elvas* and *Badajoz*. The *Chevara* is another River, but more considerable, that arising between *Portalegre* and *Maraon* runs parallel to the *Caya*, and passing by *Ouguela*, meets the *Guadiana* a little above *Badajoz*. The *Caya* and most of the Rivulets of *Alentejo*, are dry in the Summer time, without any Water save in the deep Pools.

The *Spanish* Army, departing from *Badajoz*, where it lay encamp'd extending to the *Caya*, with *Elvas* on the Left, march'd along that Rivulet, till they came within half a League of this Town, where they made a Halt, to wait the coming up of the Stragglers. About seven of the Clock in the Evening, *Don John* parted from *Badajoz*, and was received by the Army, all in their Arms in Battel Array, with a Discharge of all the Artillery. To morrow by Break of Day, *Don John* made

made all his Horse and Foot march before him, after the Custom of the *French*, and found them to amount to not above 5000 Horse, and 9000 Foot, besides Officers and Volunteers. This was done this Morning, as they pass'd over a Bridge they had made upon the *Caya*.

The *Portuguese*, to morrow after their Arrival at *Elvas*, perceiving *Don John* to appear with his Army, which they believ'd to consist of 14000 Foot and 6000 Horse, call'd a Council of War, where were present the Count *de la Torre* General of the Horse, *Denis de Mello*, and *Don Juan de Sylvez*, Lieutenant Generals, *Don Louis Menezes* General of the Artillery, and many Colonels. They sat so long, that they were oblig'd to break up without coming to any Resolution, the *Spaniards* being already come within a League of their Army. However, the most part seem'd to be for going into *Villa Viciosa*, alledging they ought to defend the Cradle of their King; for thus they call the Place of his Birth. On this Occasion appear'd the Disadvantage of a bad General: for the Marquess of *Marialva* being oblig'd to retire with all speed, his Army fell into such Disorder with the Baggage in passing a Defile, as if they had been routed; which *Don John* might now have done with Ease, had he known it.

The Count of *Schomberg*, perceiving they would take none of his Advice, was retir'd to *Elvas*, designing to meddle no further: but the General having sent him an Account of the Confusion they were in, he immediately ran thither and put the Army in Order, and in a Posture to make good their Retreat, should they be pursu'd by the *Spaniards*. But the presumptuous Vanity of the *Spanish* General was such, that instead of endeavouring

ing to receive Intelligence of the Enemy, he was busied in making a pompous Entry into his Camp, and on the morrow march'd with such Contempt of the *Portuguese*, and so firm a Perswasion, that nothing durst oppose him, that he let slip this fair opportunity of destroying the Enemy. Wherefore, having for some time march'd in sight of *Elvas*, and raz'd some *Atalayas* between this Town and *Campo Mayor*, he encamped at *las Torres de Seguera*. The next day, advancing with *Don Diego Cavallero* to appoint a Way for the Artillery and Baggage, they took that towards *Estremoz*, upon which the *Spaniards* (such is the Vanity of that Nation) immediately perswaded themselves that they were marching to *Lisbon*, seeing them on the Way to it. In the mean time *Don John* gave Orders to burn and destroy all the Houses of the Country; and in his way finding the *Atalay de Sazatero*, which refus'd to surrender, after he had taken it, he hang'd up the Commander. From thence he went to *Villa Boim*, whose Inhabitants perceiving two Regiments of Foot with four pieces of Cannon ready to give the Assault, yielded upon Articles.

The Day following *Don John* march'd his Army in good Order along the great Road to *Estremoz*, and leaving *Villa Viciosa* and *Borba* on the Left, and *Veyros* on the Right, fired the Country wherever they went, designing thus to make themselves formidable. This Day some of the *Spaniards* took a *Portuguese* Courier, sent by the Marquess of *Marialva* to the Governour of *Elvas*, to encourage him to a strenuous Defence, assuring him he had already 8000 Foot and 4000 Horse, and that he only expected the coming up of some more Troops, after which he would give Battel to the
Spaniards.

Spaniards. Don John sent back the Courier, with orders to tell his General, That to morrow about Noon he should have the Opportunity of seeing him. This Day there were some Bickerings between the *Portuguese* Scouts and the *Spanish* Horse.

The Marquess of *Marialva* with some others were still for going to *Villa Viciosa* : but the Count of *Schomberg*, who perceived this to be impossible, without greatly indangering *Estremoz*, where all the Ammunition of the Army was, the higher Town being ill fortify'd and without Water, and the Lower Town lying quite open, caus'd the Army by his own Authority march that Way, even before he knew the Design of *Don John* was to come thither : of which when he was assured, he hastned their March, making the Baggage file off upon his Left Hand, and keeping his Horse upon the Hills on his Right ; and then went before to mark out a Camp for his Army, which he design'd to entrench near the lower Town of *Estremoz*. Accordingly he cover'd his left with some Houses of the lower Town, and on the Right kept St. *Barbara's* Chappel, which stands pretty high, the Ground from Left to Right rising with a gradual Ascent : before the Lines, where the Ground ascended in like Manner, there were many Olive-Trees, which they cut down, and with the Branches made a Kind of Breast-Work, with Holes for the Guns ; so that it appear'd at a distance, as if fortify'd with Turf : upon the two Wings he plac'd some Battalions of Foot ; posting the rest in places where the Enemy might have easiest Access.

The Count of *Schomberg* had only one Day to put things in this Order ; for that same Evening
Don

Don John encamp'd within Cannon Shot of the *Portugueze*, and to morrow after within Musquet-Shot towards the Side on which *Borba* is. He caus'd immediately plant a Battery of ten Pieces of Cannon in the highest Place of his Camp opposite to *St. Barbara's*: but the Ground behind the *Portugueze* Retrenchment sloping backwards, the most part of the Shot flew over their Heads into the Lower Town.

The Management of the Count *de Schomberg* on this occasion, having by the Confession of all been of the greatest Importance to the Safety of *Portugal*, it won't possibly be unacceptable, if I insist somewhat particularly thereon. Whilst the Count of *Schomberg* was busied in fortifying the Camp, the other general Officers held a Council of War, and being all for retiring to *Ebora*, which was mightily oppos'd by the Count, they sent *Don Juan de Silvez* and *Don Louis de Meneses* his Friends to perswade him thereto. The Reasons they alledg'd were of no force with him; but he told them, to the Contrary, That to defend this Post was of absolute Necessity, which if abandon'd, there remain'd nothing but *Lisbon*, which would be very unsafe, after the Loss of *Alen-Tejo*. This Stiffness of the Count, which to the most Part of the superior Officers appear'd to be inconsiderate Boldness, made them think of saving their Silver Plate, which some of them sent to the Convents of *Estremoz*, and others to *Ebora*; and this being known to the Count of *Schomberg*, he permitted his Souldiers to plunder a Part of it, for their Encouragement.

The *Portugueze* continued all night in Arms, and labouring to fortify their Camp, that they might be in a condition to defend themselves.

The

The next day was spent in sharp Skirmishes, which made the Count of *Schomberg* take a Resolution to beat up the *Spanish* Guards; this he perform'd with three hundred Horse of his own Regiment, and two *Portugueze* Squadrons: he pursu'd the Fugitives to the Camp, entring there-into after them, where he perceiv'd they were making a great Collection of Fascins, and preparing for an Attack. To provide for which, he caus'd cut down a great number of Olive-Trees that were yet standing, with Orders to set them on fire at the Approach of the Enemy that by their Light, they might be able rightly to level their Shot: for this Wood tho' green will burn very well.

In the mean time, the Commanders of the *Spanish* Army were divided in their Opinions. *Don John* of *Austria*, and *Don Diego* Cavallero General of the Horse, were for attacking the Lines: but the Duke of *St. Germain*, General of the Artillery, and *Don Louis* Podrigo Camp-Master-General, maintain'd that it would be impossible to force the Retrenchments of the *Portugeze*, without the Loss of the most Part of the *Castilian* Foot, after which they could not undertake a Siege; that therefore it was better to attack *Gerumenba*. This last Opinion prevail'd; and the next Day *Don John* march'd, and came about ten in the Morning to *Borba*, which is a League from *Estremoz*. This Town as most others in *Portugal*, is encompass'd with an old Wall, within which there is a Large square Platform, defended with Towers in several Places. This sort of Fortification was considerable in the time of King *Denis* when it was us'd, before the Invention of great Guns.

Don

Don John caus'd three Regiments of Foot to enter the Town, who immediately seiz'd on the Outworks of the Platform or Castle, in which there were four Companies of Souldiers, and a great many stout Peasants; but being battered with four Piece of Cannon, they were forc'd to yield it. The *Spanish* Army continued there the next Day, spoiling and plundering the Town and Country about, and at three a Clock in the Afternoon, the Governour *Emanuel de Aconba*, with two Captains were hang'd, for pretending to hold out such a Place against a Royal Army. Besides there was no Cartel between the two Nations, but each did with their Prisoners what they pleas'd.

Departing from *Borba*, *Don John* march'd by *Villa Viciosa*, and diverted himself with hunting in the Park, where his Army made great Slaughter of Dear, Roe-buck, and other Game. Before he came to *Gerumenha*, a Soldier that belong'd to that Garrison was brought to him, who told him there were four Regiments in the Place, which enhanc'd the Desire he had to besiege it.

Gerumenha stands on a Hill upon the Bank of the *Guadiana*, and after the taking of *Olivenza*, it was fortify'd by the *Portuguese*, as much as the Irregularity of the Ground would allow. Within it was a Garrison of two thousand select Foot, and a hundred Horse, with all other Necessaries for enduring a long Siege, *Emanuel Loubato* being Governour of whom no man then had any Suspicion.

Whilst *Don John* was busied in the Siege of *Gerumenha*, the *Portuguese* assembled their Forces, which together with the supplies sent from *Beira*

Beira and *Tralos Montes*, amounted to ten thousand Foot; and five thousand Horse. With this Army, the Count of *Schomberg* propos'd to besiege *Albuquerque*, which would more than sufficiently make up the loss of *Gerumenba*. But the Inconsiderateness of the *Portugueze*, who are not so solicitous of making Conquests, as of keeping what they have, and who perswaded themselves, that there needed no more but to present themselves before the Lines, to make *Don John* raise the Siege, and repass the *Guadiana*, was the Cause why they slighted this Advice of making a Diverfion: Wherefore they importun'd the Count of *Schomberg* to march the Army with all Speed to *Gerumenba*, but yet to take such Care, that they might not be forc'd to come to a Battel. In compliance with 'em, the Army march'd straight to *Elvas*, from whence they coasted the *Guadiana*, which they kept on the left Hand, covering the Right with Hedges or Carts; and thus they march'd in three Lines, till within half Cannon-shot of the *Castilian* Army, which lay intrench'd on the bending of the Hill, and went on with the Siege of *Gerumenba*. The *Portugueze* having been two days there without attempting any thing, the *Spaniards* cry'd to 'em, ' That this was an *Olivenzado* like to that of ' fifty seven.

After the *Portugueze* had spent four Days, being encamped the two first between *Elvas* and *Gerumenba*, and the other two between this and *Villa Viciosa*, much annoy'd by the Guns of the Enemy, they determin'd to retire to this last which was three Leagues distant thence. The *Spaniards* perceiving them depart, charg'd them on the Rear where was *Dionysio de Mello* Lieutenant

tenant General of the Horse, and immediately put four Squadrons to the Rout; but the Count of *Schomberg* at the head of Six others coming to their Assistance, beat the *Spaniards* back within their Trenches.

Tho' there was reason to believe, that *Gerumenba* might have held out yet much longer, nevertheless *Emanuel Loubato* no sooner heard that a Miner was set a work under the *Bastion*, but he demanded to capitulate, not considering that the *Bastion* was founded on a Rock, and also separated from the Town by a strong Wall: Wherefore he surrendred the Place on the Ninth of *June*. It was said by the Creatures of *Don John*, that seeing this Governour had yielded himself to the Mercy of the King their Master, he deserv'd to have honourable Terms accorded to him; and they concluded, that the Conquest of this Town was most glorious, being atchiev'd in View of an Army as strong as their own, that durst not attack their Lines, nor attempt any thing for the Relief of the Place, dreading the Skill and Experience of so great a Commander as *Don John* was deservedly esteem'd. However *Emanuel Loubato* had found but indifferent Reception at the Court of *Portugal*, if he had not been protected by the Marquess of *Marialva*, and if the Dissensions of the *Grande*s had left them time to chastise his Cowardise.

Whilst the *Portugueze* were at Work on some Forts about *Villa Viciosa*, *Don Juan* having repaired *Gerumenba*, marched by *Veyros* and *Montforte*, the Castles whereof he demolish'd; after which he plunder'd *Crato*, and retook *Ouguela*, all which are Places without Defence. Thus ended the Cam-

Campaign in *Alen-Tejo*. In *Gallicia*, the *Spaniards* took *Portello*, which is a Castle standing on a Hill ; and carried thence a great number of Cattel. They had flatter'd themselves at *Madrid* with the Hopes, that this Year would be fatal to the *Portugueze* ; believing them to be weaker and worse govern'd than they were : But tho' they found themselves deceiv'd, and that things succeeded not to their Expectation ; nevertheless, perceiving that *England* had yet sent no Supplies to *Portugal*, and that the FaCTIONS at *Lisbon* were likely to degenerate into a Civil War, they still remain'd in the Belief, that the Rebel *Portugueze* would not be able to hold out above another Campaign, and therefore they made all requisite Preparations for it.

The *Spaniards* were now departed, and the Supplies from *Beira* sent home, the Forces of *Alen-Tejo* being also dispers'd among the Garrisons, when the Count of *Schomberg*, weary of the Service of *Portugal*, resolv'd to return to *France*, and demanded to be dismiss'd : but his Business being delayed, by reason of the great Intrigues at Court, it will be requisite to take a View of what pass'd there,

Anthony de Conti, whose Favour with the King increas'd daily, began now to have the Management of Affairs, and these even the most important, insomuch that the Preparations for the embarking of the new Queen of *England* were committed to his Care. *Edward Mountague* Earl of *Sandwich*, Admiral of the *English* Fleet, and Ambassador for his *Britannick* Majesty, finding him in this Post, treated with him as chief Minister of the King of *Portugal*, and entertain'd him splendidly aboard his Ship. The Queen with her

Creatures did not oppose this, having already concert'd his Downfal. Wherefore, the *Infanta* being imbarck'd with much Pomp and Magnificence, and entrusted to the Conduct of the Marquess of *Sandes*, who had negociated the Marriage, the Queen Regent declar'd, that now she had nothing further to do, but to have the *Infant Don Pedro* acknowledg'd for *Prince*, and to put the Administration in the King's Hands: Yet those who saw further into Affairs, doubted not but the Queen continu'd in the Design, to shut up the King in a Monastery, and put his Brother in his Place: and it was reported that the Queen's Ladies sometimes gave the *Infant* the Title of *Majesty*.

The Queen Regent perceiving that *Don Alphonso* became still more and more incapable of Governing, resolv'd to separate the *Infant* his Brother from him, and to give him a Household suitable to his Birth and the Hopes conceiv'd of him. By her Order, the Palace of *Christopher de Moura* Marquess of *Castel Rodrigo*, which stands on the Bank of the *Tajo*, a little below that of the King, was prepar'd for him. A Retinue also was assign'd him, who were *Martin Alfonso de Mello* Count of *St. Lorezo* formerly General of the Forces of *Alen-Tejo* and *Algarve*, the Count of *Soure* who had been Ambassador in *France*, and before that had commanded in *Alen-Tejo*, *Ruy de Maura Tellez*, *Don Roderick de Meneses*, *George de Mello*, and *Juan Nunho de Acunha*, afterwards Count of *St. Vincent* and Vice-Roy of *Goa*. *Roderick de Acunha de Saldanha* Chanter of the Cathedral was chosen for his Almoner, and *Anthony de Tavares* for Secretary. The Queen having nam'd these Officers, and appointed their Charges, it was reported

ported also that she was seeking for a Governour to him. Those who disapprov'd of such Innovations and Establishments, took occasion thence to perswade the King, that they design'd to put his Brother in his place; and that it was his part and not the Queen's to appoint a Household for *Don Pedro*, who ought not either to have had so many or so considerable Officers. No sooner began these Jealousies to appear on the King's part, but the Court of the *Infant* decreas'd, and his Palace was unfrequented: but the less *Don Pedro* was attended himself, the more assiduously made he his Court to his Brother.

The Miscarriages of *Don Alphonso* encreasing daily, and the Queen losing hopes of effecting her Design concerning his Younger Brother, resolv'd to put the Government in the King's Hands, and then to retire. Her Council oppos'd this Design, representing, that if she who was Queen Regent and his Mother, could not by all her Authority and Affection, have any Influence to restrain the Irregularities of *Don Alphonso*, how much less could his Subjects, who would be oblig'd to obey him: that at least before she withdrew, she ought to do them the good Office of Removing the evil Counsellors from about the King; that so they might more easily encline him, when by himself, to what was for the Good of the Kingdom. The Queen yielded to this Advice, and had thoughts of assembling the Estates: but considering that this would take more time, than the pressing Necessity of Affairs could allow, it was resolved that the Council of State, the Nobility, and the Town Council of *Lisbon* should be call'd together, and while these Assemblies were getting themselves in readiness, and the King was detain-

ed with the Queen on pretence of Business, that such Persons should be seiz'd on as they saw fit. This Project was communicated to the Marquesses of Govea and *Marialva*, Don *Francisco de Soto-Mayor* Bishop of *Targa*, the Counts of *St. Lorenzo* and *Soure*, Don *Rodrigo de Meneses*, *George de Mello*, Doctor *Nicholas de Monteyro*, *Pedro Vieyra de la Sylva* Secretary of State, Father *Anthony Vicira* a Jesuit and many other Creatures of the Queen and Infant.

In the mean time *Conti*, having either receiv'd Advice, or suspecting something of himself, went no more forth of the Palace, but either with the King, or with a Number of Attendants, insomuch that they were constrain'd to resolve upon seizing him in the Palace. In order to the execution of this Design, one *Saturday* Morning being the 16th of *June*, when the King was engag'd in business with the Queen, the Duke of *Cadaval*, *Louis de Mello* Commander of the Port, and *Emanuel de Mello* his Son, accompanied with *Emanuel Vaz de Orta Osorio* Criminal Judge of the Court, met all under the King's Appartment. Whilst the Duke gave orders to some Soldiers, to suffer none to go either in or out, *Louis de Mello* and his Son went up, and seeing *Conti* in the first Antichamber of the King, cry'd out, *Where is the Duke of Cadaval?* At these words *Conti*, now fearing the Worst, shut himself up in the inner Antichamber: At this instant the Duke came up, and trying to open the Door with his Key, found that *Conti's* Key was in the Lock on the inside; wherefore, after he had in vain knock'd and intreated him to open the Door, fearing least *Conti* should escape by a Door which led to the Queen's Appartment, *Emanuel Mello* ran thither :
In

In the mean time the Duke, passing along the Terrass, found *Conti* endeavouring to get out at a Window, and took hold of him by the hair of the Head. *Conti* demanding the Reason of that Violence, ask'd if they meant to kill him? The Duke answer'd, That he was seiz'd by the King's Order, but that they had no Design on his Life. *Conti*, hereupon, promising to open the Door, the Duke let go his hold, but refusing to perform, Hatchets were sent for.

The Count of *Castel-Melbor* hearing of what pass'd, went to the Chamber, where the King was at Business, to give him Notice; but seeing the Door shut, he walk'd about to enter at the other side, and finding the Duke fighting with *Conti*, he chid the Duke and gave him harsh Language, for violating the Priviledges of the Palace, which was a Sanctuary and should be held Sacred; and not having Access this Way, he was forc'd to quit his Design of informing the King.

The Hatchets being come, they told *Conti*, that if he oblig'd them to break open the Door, he was a dead Man; upon which he yielded himself. As he came out, he was arrested by the Provost; who afterwards apprehending *Balthazar Rodrigo de Matos* Groom of the Wardrobe, they were both led along the Terrass to the Barge-House, where they were put in a Boat and carried to a Ship ready to sail for *Brasil*.

At the same time were also seiz'd *John de Matos*, and *Francisco Bernardo Taveira* the one famous at Bull-courfing, and the other the King's Confident in his secret Debauches, both of them belov'd by him: *John Conti* the Favourite's Brother was also taken. But *Balthazar* was sent back to Land again, and *Taveira* endeavouring to e-

scape out of Prison, was dash'd to pieces upon the Rocks.

The Queen being advis'd of what had pass'd, sent for the Nobility, Ministers of State, Council of the City, and the Council of twenty four, who were in the adjoining Apartments, to her Chamber where she waited for them with the King. When they had taken their Places, the Secretary of State read a Writing, which was address'd to the Assembly, containing in substance as follows. ' That the Queen had not taken up-
' on her the Regency, but in compliance with
' the Will of the deceas'd King, and for the Af-
' fection she bore to her Son, and the Comfort
' of her Subjects, in acknowledgement of the
' good Services she had receiv'd from them; that
' being affected with the Troubles of the King-
' dom and Complaints of the People, in defect of
' the three Estates, she had assembled the several
' Courts of Judicature, to tell the King in their
' Presence, what she thought needful to remove
' them; and if this was not thought sufficient,
' she was ready to follow what other Advice
' they would give her; That Justice being not du-
' ly administrated, she had resolv'd to reform the
' Abuses had crept into the different Courts of
' Judicature; but that she understood with ex-
' treme Regret, that the universal Complaint was
' of the King, that he apply'd not himself to the
' Government of his Kingdom, delighting only in
' violent Exercises, whereby they were in danger
' to be depriv'd of their Prince every Moment:
' that she entreated all present to join with her,
' in praying the King to take care of his Safety,
' which was a Favour he could not refuse the
' most considerable part of his Subjects; especial-
ly

ly confidering the most part of them, had lost
c both their Children and Goods in maintaining
c his Interests.

After this, addressing himself to *Don Alfonso*, the Secretary conjur'd him, in name of the whole Assembly, to change the course of his Life, assuring him of their Affections and Fidelity: then directing his discourse to the Assembly, he declared at length what the Queen had done to Remedy all these Evils; and ended with a Protestation to the King, that all his good Subjects had found themselves under an undispensible Necessity, of making to him these humble Remonstrances, and earnestly desiring him, by mediation of the Queen, to have regard thereto.

After this Writing was read, every one, according to Custom, having kiss'd the hand of the King and of the Queen, they departed: but as they were going, the Queen being told what had pass'd between the Duke *de Cadaval*, and the Count *de Castel-Melbor*, she made them Friends again.

As the Assembly broke up, the King ask'd the Great Huntsman, who open'd the Door, *If this was the three Estates?* he answer'd, *it was not*, and seeing himself alone with the King, he added, *That to satisfy the Complaints of the People against Anthony de Conti, the Queen had order'd to arrest him, which was the Design of the Paper that he had now heard.* Scarcely had the King heard him out, but he rose up, and like one mad run to the Chamber of *Conti*, where not finding him, he begun to curse, and fell into a Violent Passion. The great Huntsman told him that his Anger was in vain, seeing the Vessel wherein they had put him, was now under Sail for *Brasil*. The

King in gréat Consternation sent for *Emanuel Antunéz* an intimate Friend of *Conti*, and as he enter'd by one Door, the Count of *Castel-Melhor* who was in waiting that Week, came in at the Other, but as was said accidentally: The Great Huntsman left them alone; and these three continu'd in conversation without Interruption till Dinner. The King eat less than at other times, and tho' he did all he could to conceal his Displeasure, yet part of it still appear'd. In the Evening he went to the Riding-House; and that Night he had a Conference with a Lady of the Palace, wherein it was concluded, that such a wicked Attempt ought not to go unpunish'd, but was to be reveng'd. From thenceforth the King ordered his Conduct according to the Advices were given him, especially after, with his permission, the Count of *Castel Melhor*, had brought into his Majesties Chamber *Henry Anriquez de Miranda*, with whom the Count discours'd all that Night. Upon *Sunday*, as the King went to Mass, the Queen said to the Count of *Castel Melhor*, who follow'd him: *I know the King loves, and confides in you; wherefore I thought fit to let you understand, that if he does any thing contrary to my Will, I will blame you only, and you only shall answer for it at your Peril.* At this the Count was mightily surpriz'd, believing all was discover'd; but recovering himself a little by that time the Queen had ceas'd to speak, he made his Obeysance and went on. The Courtiers now seeing all things quiet in the Royal Family, extoll'd all the Queen had done the Day before.

The waiting week of the Count de *Castel Melhor* being out; *Don Alfonso* order'd him to continue another; and upon *Munday* the King, according

according to his Custom, went to *Alcantara* a House of Pleasure about a League below *Lisbon*, but with more Pomp than usual: for he had taken order to be attended by the *Infant* and most part of the Nobility. All were now in expectation of some great Event, because the Count of *Castel Melhor* waited a second Week, and had written to the Secretary in very imperious Terms, that the King desir'd to Know, if Orders had been given to kill *Conti*, after passing out of the River; and if he had any Warrant to arrest *Emanuel Antanez*? In the Evening he visited the Queen without any Signs of Resentment. On the *Tuesday* nothing hapened: but on *Wednesday*, immediately after Dinner, the King went in a Disguise to *Alcantara*, accompanied only by the Count of *Castel Melhor*, and gave notice to none but the Count de *Atouguia*, who immediately repair'd to him. The first thing they resolv'd on was, to send for *Sebastian Cesar de Meneses* Counsellor of State, and the German Guards; at the same time the King caus'd write to all in whom he had most Confidence: and afterwards he call'd together all the Nobility of the Court, and acquainted all the Governours of Towns and Provinces, that he had taken the Government upon him.

The Queen, hearing of all that pass'd at *Alcantara*, assembled her Ministers, and by their Advice wrote to the King her Son to come back to *Lisbon*, that she might put the Government in his Hands. But before the Bishop of *Targa* came with this Letter, *Emanuel Pacheco de Mello* was sent to tell all those who were going to *Alcantara*, to come before they spoke to the Queen: Some obey'd; but *Alvaro Pirez de Castro* Marquess of *Cascaya* told
Pacheco,

Pacheco, that he went to *Alcantara* only to see what was done there, and give account thereof to the Queen, as also he did: But *Emanuel Souza de Macedo* did not in like manner.

The Night Drawing on, and the King not having yet a large enough Attendance, it was thought advisable for the Safety of his Person that he should retire to Fort St. *Julian*, about three Leagues below upon the *Tajo*; but many of the Nobility coming afterwards, and more being expected the Proposal was laid aside.

On Thursday the King answered the Letter of the Queen by *Thomas de Neronha* Count de *Arcos*; he wrote also to the Infant by *Anthony Anriquez de Miranda*: Don Pedro sent his Answer by *Rodrigo de Meneses*, and greatly importun'd his Brother to come to the Queen; and to enduce him thereto, he ask'd his Permission to come to him, that he might wait on him in his return.

The Queen wrote a second Letter to her Son Don *Alfonso*, and sent it by the Count de *Arcos*, to which the King answered not; but he required the Secretary of State to come to him, who accordingly went on *Friday*, and also the Infant, both with the Queen's Knowledge. Don Pedro was well receiv'd, and din'd with the King, who made him come into the Council, but sending the Secretary away, he order'd him to dispatch Letters to fix Councillors of State whom he had nam'd. The Secretary excus'd himself by a Remonstrance, which was heard and followed, and it was therefore resolv'd to send him back to the Queen to demand the Seals of the Kingdom: but this he declin'd, telling the King, that it was not needful, forasmuch as he knew for certain, that the Queen would, together with the
Seals,

Seals, deliver up the Government to him, provided he would return to the Palace ; which the King promis'd to do, if the Queen would but once more signify so much to him in writing. Wherefore the *Infant* with the Secretary of State return'd to *Lisbon*, and having given account to the Queen what they had done at *Alcantara*, it was resolv'd to grant the King what he demanded: but the Secretary not returning to write that Dispatch, till towards the Evening, the King, who was impatient of Delay, sent the Count de *Pombeyro*, to know the Queen's last Resolutions from her own Mouth ; who brought to *Don Alfonso* this Billet from the Queen: *To morrow the Courts of Judicature shall be assembled about ten a clock, and in their presence, I will deliver unto you the Seals and the Administration of the Government ; I earnestly entreat you to be here.*

This Letter quieted their Minds at *Alcantara*; and on *Saturday* the 23d of *June*, *Don Alfonso* being almost nineteen years of Age, came from *Alcantara* to *Lisbon*, surrounded with the Nobility, and a great Concourse of People. The *Infant* whose Coach was not ready, sent to excuse himself to the King ; who therefore pass'd by his Lodging. The *Infant* when he saw him coming, went down to the Gate, and being taken up into the Coach, they rode from thence, and alighted at the Palace. Being come where the Queen was, they plac'd themselves, the one on her Right the other on her left Hand ; and all the Nobility, Ministers of State, and Magistrates of the City being seated according to their Ranks, the Great Master of the Wardrobe plac'd a Chair of Velvet before the King, upon which the Secretary of State laid a Purse, wherein was contain'd the Seals of the Kingdom;

Kingdom ; and about a Minute after took it up again, and gave it to the Queen, who presenting it to the King, said ; *Here are the Seals of the Kingdom, which together with the Regency, were entrusted to me by the Will of my deceas'd Lord the King ; I deliver them into your Majesties hands, with the Authority that accompanies them : God grant that all things may succeed under your Government, according to my Wish.* The King receiv'd them, and gave them to the Secretary of State ; after which the Assembly broke up.

The Queen having quitted the Regency, gave out that she would retire within six Months, not being able sooner to prepare her self a Place whether to go : and scarcely was this Revolution at Court known abroad, but every one began to change his Note: Nothing was now so much talk'd of as the King's Capacity, in whom every day new Abilities were discovered. But the Truth is, when ever he was to speak in Publick, he had always some Hints given him of what he was to say ; and he was intirely govern'd by the Counts of *Atouguia* and *Castel Melhor*, and *Sebastian Cesar*, who engaged him to be always present at Councils and other Dispatches.

But forasmuch as the Count of *Castel Melhor* soon prevail'd in the King's Favour over the other two, whereby he became henceforth one of the prime Actors in the Affairs of this History, it won't be amiss here to say something of him. *Louis de Suza de Vasconcellos* Count of *Castel Melhor* was a Person of a Comely Presence and agreeable Conversation, his Spirit easy, yet diligent and Laborious, loving Glory, but too much exalted in Prosperity, and no less dejected under Disgraces ; he was moreover of an illustrious Birth.

Birth. His Father was greatly belov'd by King *John*; and no sooner was this Prince inform'd that the Marquess of *Castel Melhor* was Captive at *Cathagena* in *America*, but he immediately went down to the Port, hired the first Vessel he found, sending it away for the Relief of this Prisoner, which was accordingly effected; who after he had pass'd through great Difficulties and Dangers, from which he was sav'd as it were miraculously, came home and perform'd many important Services to his Prince. Towards the end of the Reign of *Don John*, the Count of *Castel Melhor* and six other Noble Men of his Age, quarrell'd with some other Lords at *Tennis*, and in the Scuffle, the Count de *Vimiosa*, was kill'd, who was descended from a natural Son of one of the Kings of *Portugal*. *Don John* was so incens'd at this Murther, that all the Accomplices were constrain'd to quit the Kingdom, and travell'd in *Italy*, *France*, and elsewhere, wearing the Divice of an *Hydra*. But *Don John* being dead, their Peace was made, and they were restor'd to their Offices.

As the Frowns of Fortune are for the most part attended with a Complication of Mischiefs, so also her Smiles come accompanied with many other Advantages. For whilst the Queen was thus resigning the Government, the Wind blew fair, and the Ship wherein *Conti* was, hoisted Sail, and departed for *Brasil*: so that now the new Favourites were delivered from the Competition of a mighty Rival. And now they endeavoured to remove the Queen's Creatures, and began with the Banishment of the Duke de *Cadaval*, and the Count de *Soure*. Yet was not this so soon effected, tho' the Count de *Atouguia* was sufficiently

sufficiently dispos'd to revenge himself, for the Loss of his Office of General of the Forces of *Allen-Tejo*. This Noble Man was a Person of great Judgment, and fitter for the Council than the Camp: for if he was not the first Contriver of the Project of making the King be declar'd Major, yet was he at least as the *Primum Mobile*, which without appearing, gives motion to all the Stars in the Firmament. Whilst these three Ministers order'd the Affairs of the Kingdom at their Pleasure, *Henry Anriquez de Miranda*, a Man of a very mean Aspect, and a Spirit close, lively and enterprising, corrupt in Manners, and little or nothing esteem'd by Persons of Honour, began to be much in Favour. He was loved by the Count of *Castel Melhor*, because of his Ability to give Advice, and Pleasant Humour; and was by him presented to the King, who was so taken with him; that it was said, If the Count was more concern'd in the Management of publick Affairs, yet had the other the chief Disposal of his Majesties Diversions.

The Count of *Castel Melhor* in a small time had made mighty Advances in the King's Favour. He had lodg'd himself in the Palace, in the Apartment of Prince *Theodosius*, was made *Escrivao de Apuridade* or *private Secretary*, and afterwards a Councillor of State. The Office of *Private Secretary*, is one of the chief Places at Court: for in this Country all things are manag'd by Petitions, Supplications or Requests, which are address'd to the King, and deliver'd to this Secretary, who considers them, and presents none to the King but what he pleases. If the Business has relation to the War, the Petition is sent to the Council of War, who write their Thoughts upon the

the same Paper under the King's Orders: if the King, after he has read their Advice, judges that what is demanded is Just, and if it is a Matter of Mony, he causes write, under the Opinion of the Council of War, an Order to take the Mony of the Custom-House, or from some other Fund; and if there is not enough of Mony there, they write at the Bottom of the King's Order to acquaint his Majesty therewith; which when the King hath seen, he appoints another day of Payment: but if there is Mony in the Fund to which he is sent, the Petitioner is payed, and writes his Acquittance at the Bottom of the Paper. All this is sometimes dispatch'd in one Day; but at other times whole Months are therein spent in Vain. All the Courts of Judicature that belong to the Palace, are duely attended by the Members who are either all or most part present. But what is here most considerable, is, that all Business must pass in a manner several times through the Hands of the Secretary *de Apuridade*, as well what concerns the War, and Benefices, as what belongs to Offices of Judicature, and other Dignities. For nothing is sold in *Portugal*; but every thing is demanded and obtain'd by way of Petition, as well as Favours and Rewards: inso-much that the King of *Portugal* is the only Prince of the World, that has most at his Disposal.

Henrick Anriquez de Miranda was also made Lieutenant General of the Artillery, and Overseer of all the Magazines of the Kingdom. And now these Favourites being sufficiently establish'd, they banish'd Father *Anthony Vieira*, for Writing the Remonstrance which so much incens'd the King. This famous Preacher had many Enemies; and as every one is apt to insult the unfortunate, he

he was also arrested by the Inquisition, under pretence of Heresy, for having maintain'd the Opinion of the Millenaries. The Secretary of State was also banish'd for reading that Paper: and at the same time the Duke *de Cadaval*, the Great Huntsman, the Count of *Soure*, the Count of *Pombeiro*, were sent into Exile. The Governour of the Port also was discharg'd to come into the Palace; the Marquess of *Govea* was order'd to retire to his Estates, and *Monteiro* the King's Preceptor was commanded to go to his Benefice.

The Count of *Castel-Melhor* appointed *Don Pedro de Sousa* his Uncle, a Benedictin for Confessor to the King, and *Anthony de Sousa de Macedo* was made Secretary of State. This last, immediately after King *John* was proclaim'd, had been sent Secretary of an Embassy into *England*; and since that time, had pass'd through several Employments. He was a Person of diligence, but he had much more of the Pedant than the Doctor, and his Zeal for his Party, was much more considerable, than any other Assistance he could bring thereto.

All the Favourites did Jointly indeavour to perswade the *Infant* to return again to live in the Palace. *Henric Enriquez* did ply him so with Flattery, that he prevail'd with him to abide at *Alcantara*. The most part of these Officers that had been appointed him by the Queen, were no more with him. The Count *de St. Lorenzo* was busied with his Office of Intendant of the Finances, the Count *de Soure* was in *Algrave*, *Ruy de Maura Tellez* was retir'd, and *Juan Nunho de Aconha* was with the Army in the Province of *Minbo*. Wherefore others were put in their Place, to wit, *Don Fernando de Meneséz* Count *de Heiricera*,

cera, Pedro Cesar de Menesez, Ruy Fernandez de Almada, Ruy Figueredo de Alarcan, Anthony Anriquez de Miranda, and Don Diego de Menesez, all the Friends and Relations of the Favourites.

During the time of these Revolutions and what follow'd upon them, another Intrigue was set on Foot at Court, which tho' neither so sudden nor so conspicuous, yet put the State in greater Danger than that I have related. The Count of *Schomberg* was highly displeas'd at the many vexing Disappointments he had been constrain'd to undergo, during the two last Campaigns. He perceiv'd that his Advice, how seasonable soever, was not follow'd, that he was oblig'd uncessantly to repair the Faults of others; that his Honour and Reputation were every minute expos'd by the Ignorance of General Officers, who were guided rather by their own Humours, than the solid Maxims of War; that it was dangerous to depend upon a General and a Council, whose Rules were founded on single Events, which ought no more to be drawn into Consequence than Miracles. He saw moreover that the Country was unprovided of all things, and that this War could not but in the sequel prove dishonourable to himself. Wherefore he was peremptorily resolv'd to demand permission to return into *France*: and he was much encouraged in this Design by all the Officers he had brought with him from *France*, who being ill pay'd, and seeing no hopes of better for the Future, concurr'd with him, and much encreas'd the Desire he had to depart.

Amongst these Officers, there was one *Chauvet*, the Son of an Artificer of *Phalsbourg*, who was a Person tall and well shap'd. He had been formerly

merly recommended to the Viscount of *Turenne*, as one well skill'd in leading Parties, who made him a Cornet in his Regiment, where he was afterwards advanc'd to be a Captain. The Count of *Schomberg* having seen, for the most Part, what *Chauvet* had done in *France*, gave him in *Portugal* the Office of a Lieutenant Colonel in his own Regiment, and on all Occasions us'd him with great Respect, whereby the Heart and Spirit of *Chauvet* was visibly puffed up with Ambition, and a good Opinion of himself, which yet he covered with a seeming Modesty, and much Civility. *Chauvet* perceiving the Youth, who were of the Party of the Count *de Castel-Melhor*, prevail'd over these of the Queen's Faction, and that the former were offended at the frequent Complaints of the Count *de Schomberg*, who blam'd their Want of Skill, and threatn'd to leave them, became of their Cabal; and thenceforth he endeavour'd to perswade, that the Count of *Schomberg* was in the Wrong, and pretending much Knowledge, he gave them to understand that he had no less Skill in military Affairs than he. This being brought to the Ears of the Count *de Castel-Melhor*, who, now beginning to come into Favour, was desirous to support himself on every Side, he made a secret Treaty with *Chauvet*, wherein, amongst other things, it was agreed, that he should be made General of all the Forreign Forces, after the Departure of the Count of *Schomberg*. From this time forth *Chauvet* pretended a greater aversion than any other for the Service of *Portugal*, and protested he would depart, tho' no Man else should accompany him. The Count *de Schomberg*, who believ'd him to be sincere, hereby confirm'd himself in his Resolution, and continu'd

to demand his Discharge, in such sort that he obtain'd it: He sold his Equipage, dismiss'd his Retinue, and sent aboard the Horses he design'd to carry with him, being determin'd the next day, which was the 9th of *October*, to set Sail, if the Wind was favourable. But two unexpected Adventures changed the Face of Affairs.

There was at that time in *Lisbon*, besides those who made up the Factions of the Queen and of the Favourites, some stanch Patriots, who had no farther Aim but the Good of their Country. These evidently perceiv'd, that under God the Safety of the State depended only on the Count *de Schomberg*. One of these well affected Persons went to the Judge of the People, and perswaded him to go and speak to the King, to interpose his Authority for the safety of the Realm.

The Kings of *Portugal*, to put a stop to the depravation of Manners amongst the People, have establish'd at *Lisbon* a Council of twenty four Tradesmen, into which one can't be admitted, nor enjoy the Priviledges of that Society, which Nobilitates, unless he can make it appear that he is the Son and the Grand-son of Persons unblamable, of an exemplary Vertue, and in a word of a good Life and laudable Manners. He who presides in this Assembly, has an Authority not unlike to that of the Tribunes in the *Roman Republick*. This was the Person, who went to wait upon the King, accompanied only with his Clerk according to the Custom, the Day before the Count of *Schomberg* was to depart: He told his Majesty, *That he came to declare to him in the name of all his good Subjects, that he ought not to let the Count of Schomberg depart; that they could be no other but Enemies of the State, who had advis'd his Ma-*

jeſty to grant him his Leave, ſeeing the loſs of Portugal would in a ſhort time follow. As he ended his Diſcourſe, he turn'd to his Clerk, and demanded an Inſtrument of what he had ſaid to the King: His Majeſty, tho' ſomewhat ſurpriz'd, answer'd, *That a due regard ſhould be had to his Remonſtrance.*

Towards the Evening, *Colbert du Terron* Intendant of *Rockelle*, came to anchor before *Lisbon*, and landing went to the Count of *Schomberg*. He told him, ' That in *France* they had conſider'd ' what he had written from *Portugal*, and were ' ſufficiently convinc'd how neceſſary his Preſence ' was there, and that therefore he had come on ' purpoſe to perſwade him to ſtay; that he ' ought not to lay to heart the Injuſtice was done ' him, nor the little Regard was had to his Advice, ſeeing the Services he had done there, ' were highly eſteem'd of elſewhere; that it was ' well known he wanted many things in *Portugal*, ' but with Money all might be ſupply'd: To theſe he added many things and left others to his own Conſideration. This Diſcourſe, together with a Letter from the King, made him change his Reſolution: which Alteration of his Deſign, was yet further confirm'd, by what I am about to relate.

The King of *England*, who was oblig'd to ſend Supplies into *Portugal*, had accordingly in *July* landed there a Body of Horſe and Foot, commanded by the Earl of *Inchequin*. This General not being able to accomodate himſelf to the Humours of the *Portugueze*, had demanded of the King his Maſter leave to withdraw. About this time his Permiſſion came, and therein, amongſt other things, he was order'd to repair, together with other Forces which they were ſending, to the
Town

Town of *Tangier*, to take the Possession and Government of that Place, and to leave the Command of the *English* in *Portugal* to his Brother the Earl of *Obrian*, with Orders to obey the Count of *Schomberg*, who was declar'd General of the Forces there, in consideration of the good Service he had done in the civil Wars of *England*. And now the Count seeing himself General of the Forces of three Kings, his only Care was to make a good Use of these Favours.

After he had sufficiently inform'd *Colbert du Terron*, of the unskilfulness of the *Portugueze* in War, of their Inconsideration, and the Weakness of their Country, and how their Care was more to ruin one anothers Interest at Court, than to provide and strengthen themselves against a vigilant and formidable Enemy ; after, I say, *Colbert du Terron* was sufficiently instructed in these things, he set Sail, and soon after arriv'd in *France*. In the mean time the Count of *Schomberg* made a very particular Acquaintance with the Count of *Castel-Melhor*, who was already as prime Minister, and with *Anthony Sousa de Macedo*, Secretary of State, and a Creature of this Favourite. These Ministers, because of their want of Experience, flatter'd themselves that all things would succeed according to their Wishes : for with the *Portugueze* one Example of good Success, passes for a sufficient Assurance of the like happy Fortune for the future ; wherein they are sway'd much more by Fancy than Reason. The Count of *Schomberg* endeavour'd every Day as well in publick as in private to rectify their Mistakes concerning War, and supported the Hopes of the *French* Officers and Soldiers, assuring them that they should be pay'd for the future without any

trouble; that they should have no further occasion to sue for Warrants, nor to lose a great deal of time in getting them to pass through the several Offices, and that they should no more depend on the *Veadors* and Intendants, but for their Horses and Forrage. Moreover, tho' he very much suspected that *Chauvet* had play'd him a Trick, yet having no Proof thereof, and looking on him as a Man of Courage and Conduct, he detach'd two Companies from his own Regiment, that of *Chauvet*, and that of *Brantes*, to which he joyned that of the Button-maker of *Montjeorge*, and afterwards two more of *Catalonians* that were in *Portugal*, and of these five Companies he made a Regiment, which was given to *Chauvet*, and was call'd by his Name. In such kind of Occupations did *Schomberg* spend the Winter at *Lisbon*, expecting the performance of the Promises made by *France*.

Although *Colbert du Terron* had departed from *Lisbon* sufficiently inform'd of the pressing Necessities of *Portugal*, yet at his Return into *France*, for reasons too tedious here to be recounted, he was pleas'd to say, that he doubted not but with fifty thousand Crowns a year, *Portugal* would be in a Condition to defend it self against *Spain*. But he was not able to perswade the Viscount of *Turenne* hereof, who had consider'd that Affair, and was perfectly instructed therein by the Correspondence he had with the Count of *Schomberg*. Wherefore, without minding this Advice, he demonstrated to the King in private, that the State of Affairs in *Portugal*, was much more deplorable than was reported; that *Colbert du Terron* had been there for too small a time, to be able to frame a right Judgment of their Condition; that
it

it was necessary to send thither one in whom they might confide, who should remain upon the Place, and who acting in Concert with the Count of Schomberg, should only demand what he thought absolutely necessary, that it might be sent to them. The King approv'd of this Proposal, and asking whom he thought fit to be sent; the Viscount of Turenne mention'd *Fremont d' Ablancourt*, whom he had nam'd to him for the same Employment six Months before, but several unlucky Accidents had hindred his Departure. His Majesty gave his Consent hereto, and without having seen him, order'd the Viscount of Turenne to give him his Instructions, and to send him away with all speed and requisite Precaution:

Fremont d' Ablancourt was Nephew to the Famous Translator *Perrot d' Ablancourt*, by whom he was also educated. He had been pretty well accustom'd to such kind of Business, for seven Years past, wherein he had to do with the Governours, both Friends and Enemies, of the Frontiers of *Ardennes*: Moreover he was reputed a Person diligent, disinterested, and so intirely taken up with his Duty, that thereby he became uneasy to those of his Acquaintance. Having, therefore, receiv'd his Instructions from the Viscount of Turenne, he departed from *Charleville* on the 20th of *January*, and in three days arriv'd at *London*, This Way was appointed him, both to hasten, and also to conceal his intended Voyage: but the *Thames* being frozen up, he could not find any Vessel going for *Portugal*: in the mean time he was urged by Letters from *France*, to depart immediately, without being at the Charge of hiring a Vessel: notwithstanding, he parted not from *Gravesend* till the 20th of *February*, that he went aboard a great

Hamburg Ship, which went in company of three more loaden with Salt for *St. Ubes*. Towards the Evening, all these Ships, tho' each of them had taken an *English* Pilot aboard to guide them out of the *Thames*, struck on the Banks: One of 'em was lost, and two more shatter'd; but the greatest having nothing in her but Balast, and being also new, got free, after she had touch'd three times, without hurt. This Misfortune, whereby these three Vessels were detain'd before *Deal* till the next Day at Noon, was the cause of meeting with *Mimbielle* a Domestick of the Viscount of *Turenne*, who after having in vain search'd for *Fremont* at *London*, he heard of that Shipwrack, as he return'd along the Banks of the *Thames*, and by this means found what he sought after. The reason of this Message was to give Notice in *Portugal* of a great Conspiracy against the King *Don Alfonso* and those of his Party. The Name of the Chief of the Conspirators, with the Particulars of the Conspiracy were specified, with an Order to *Fremont* forthwith to hire a Vessel: to this it was added, that least by this Means only, the News should come too late, an express had been dispatch'd to *Colbert du Terron* at *Rochelle*, with the same Instructions, in order to prevent so great a Mischief: Moreover, that *Colbert du Terron* was not to remain there, but that *Fremont* should so order himself with respect to him, that they might have nothing to do one with the other. The Reason of this was, because for some considerable time, the Viscount of *Turenne*, had been envy'd the Glory of this Negotiation, and also endeavours had been us'd, either to frustrate it, or to get it intrusted to the Management of some other.

Whilst

Whilst the Envoy was experiencing variety of Chances by Sea, we will resume the Thread of our History of Portugal. The Favourites of *Don Alfonso*, vext that the Queen did not retire, took upon them to speak evil of her in the King's Presence, and to blame her for all the ill Success of the Government. This Prince not contented, that others should fail in their Respect for his Mother in his sight, past one day himself publicly before her without saluting her, whereat she was so sensibly concern'd, that she desir'd that very minute to depart from the Palace. But soon after she had a far greater Cause of Displeasure, when the *Infant* upon his Return from *Salvatierra*, seem'd in a manner to have forsaken her. But notwithstanding all this, the King went to see her as formerly, and us'd her well or ill according to his humour, or rather according as he was inspir'd by his Confidents; for perceiving that he had one time treated her with a little more Civility than usual, they Order'd to let her know as from the King, that she must depart from the Palace. That Princess without further Delay, sent Notice to the Count of *Castel Melhor*, that she would depart on the morrow, which was the day before *Palm-Sunday*. Accordingly upon *Saturday* after Noon, the Queen being in one Coach, and the King with the *Infant* in another, they departed from the Palace, to go to the Convent which the Queen had chosen. On this occasion there was nothing to be seen extraordinary, besides a great Concourse of People: the two Brothers left their Mother, at the Entry of an Antichamber full of all the Nobility of the Court: and when the King demanded her Blessing, she made him no Answer; but upon the *Infant's* making the same suit to her, she said, *Ja he tarde.* i. e. 'Tis

Tis now too Late. From this time forth none spoke with the Queen, but by the King's permission.

Don Alphonso being no more restrain'd by the Presence of his Mother, began now to live more licentious than ever; and in the Night time together with his *Bravo's* he assaulted whatever he met in the Streets, not sparing even the Watch. One Day he fired into the Coach of the Count *de Fontes*, and at another time he attack'd that of the Count *de Hericeira*, where the Count himself was with his Family. I shall say nothing of the Disturbance he gave to a famous Procession, which was celebrated in the Night, where many people were wounded; nor how the *Mulatto's* that guided his Litter, on another occasion, by his order gave a mortal Wound to *Pedro Severino* Secretary to one of the Courts, who, by the care of the Count of *Castel Melbor* was carried to the Palace where, he dy'd: I will leave the Sequel of these Disorders to the end of the Campaign.

In the mean time *Fremont* arriving at *Lisbon* on the 16th of *March*, went to the Palace to look for the Count of *Schomberg*, where finding him, they went both into a Litter, and were carried to the Count's Lodging: there *Fremont* having delivered his Credentials, discovered to him the Conspiracy. The Count of *Schomberg*, after he had sufficiently inform'd himself, return'd alone to the Palace, to demonstrate the Importance of that Affair to the Count of *Castel Melbor*; but that chief Minister, either being incumbered with Business, because the Queen was the next day to go into a Convent, or not believing the danger so pressing, put off that Business till his Return. The next day being in his Closet at the hour assign'd,

assign'd, he told the Count of *Schomberg* and *Fremont*, that he had imparted the Affair to four Counsellors of State, that the King of *England* might not blame him, for dealing too superficially in a Matter wherein he was concern'd; for the principal Conspirators were his Subjects. After they had discours'd at large of the Conspiracy, and delivered each their Opinion, it was concluded, that the Earl of *Obrian* should be arrested, and sent to his own Country, without telling him the Reason why; and that the Count of *Schomberg* should retain the *English* under his Command, to facilitate which they received the most part of the Pay was due to them.

At this time the Count of *Schomberg*, who had languished for some Days, fell dangerously ill; and tho' he had no Fever, yet was he blooded Twelve times in six days, without perceiving any abatement of the Pain he had in his Stomach, which gave great Suspicions of his being poisoned. At length he was advis'd to take an Emetick, by which his Distemper was remov'd; but he had been so mightily weakened by great Evacuations, that all *April* and part of *May*, was pass'd before he was able to mount a Horse. Whilst he was thus a recovering, he endeavoured to make *Fremont* understand, of what import it would be, to have a Body of *French* in *Portugal*, which Join'd to the *English* there, would be of much more Use, than the Soldiers of the Country, that are with difficulty got together, and very apt to desert; he told him it was extremely necessary that one good Regiment of *French* Foot, and two of Horse, should be sent, and that instead of one hundred thousand Crowns, he must demand two, wherewith they might maintain these Regiments,
and

and those of *Schomberg* and *Chauvet*, which by this means not depending on the *Portuguese*, save only for Bread and Forrage, would undoubtedly be capable of doing much better service than otherwise. Upon this the Count of *Schomberg* depended; for he had been assured, that whatever *Fremont* should demand, should be sent for the Defence of the Country.

In the mean time, *Colbert du Terron*, who for the greater Expedition had gone aboard a small Vessel, arrived. The bad weather had cast him upon the Coast of *Spain*, where the Governour of the Port would have kept him Prisoner, upon account that whatever Vessels were found going or coming between *France* and *Portugal*, were lawful Prize; but *Colbert du Terron*, being a person of much Discretion, had brought with him a Commission from the Duke of *Vendosme*, so that he was permitted to pass. Having pass'd *Galicia*, he landed on the Coast of *Portugal*, and came to *Lisbon* by Land, three months after the Arrival of *Fremont*, being extremely vex'd that he had not prevented him.

The usual Discourse of the Count *de Schomberg*, *Colbert du Terron* and *Fremont* was concerning the ill State of Affairs in *Portugal*, the Great Preparations of *Spain*, the little Experience of the Count of *Castel Melhor*, the Inflexibility of the Secretary of State, and the little Assistance could be expected from the Country of *Portugal*; but especially concerning the Slowness of all their motions, wherefore it was concluded that the Count of *Schomberg* should with great Freedom speak of these things to the chief Minister.

The Count of *Castel Melhor*, when he first began to be in Favour, had appear'd to be Weary
of

of his Ministry, finding that the Labour would surpass his Strength, and seem'd to be willing to discharge himself of the Fatigues of an Employment, from which he expected much more Trouble than Pleasure. The Count of *Schomberg*, knowing how hurtful Changes are to the progress of Affairs, so encourag'd the Count of *Castel Melhor*, that he brought him to resolve to keep his Post: but perceiving him again to relapse into his Irresolution, he remonstrated to him that the Government of a State was either Outward or Inward; as for the Outward or external, which concerns the War, he would take it upon himself; and for the Inward, he advis'd him to make use of *Fremont*, who was a Person of Integrity, and of whose Labour he might have all the Glory, without being expos'd to the importunate Demands made by the *Portuguese*, when they believe themselves necessary, or think they have done some considerable Service.

The Count of *Castel Melhor* approv'd the Proposals, and accepted the Proffer; and the Count of *Schomberg* embark'd for *Alen-Tejo*. *Colbert du Terron* was resolv'd to expect at *Lisbon* the Result of this Campaign, that he might have something to report at his Return: he went but Seldom to Court, even at such times as he was free of the Gout, and kept his little Vessel always in readiness that he might use it on occasion. As for *Fremont*, he went constantly twice a day to the Palace, where the Count of *Castel Melhor*, who was very assiduous at Business, conceal'd nothing from him, and ask'd his Advice in every thing he had to do. How much this Minister was at that time afraid of Trouble, may appear from hence: The News being come towards the end of *April*,
that

that the Town of *Orense*, one of the Chief in *Galicia*, had risen up against the Garrison, every one was of Opinion, that if Assistance were speedily sent to it, it might be brought to side with *Portugal*; upon which *Fremont* offered himself to go thither, whilst in the mean time *Colbert du Teron* might assist in ordering daily Affairs: to this that Favourite Minister made answer; *Since Portugal as at present it is, employs me both Night and Day, why would you altogether overwhelm me, by adding to it another Province?*

Whilst the *Portuguese* were busied in getting in a Readiness their Horse and Foot, and in fortifying their Towns, as much as their want of Money would permit, the Count *de Villafior*, who was made Governour Military of *Alen-Tejo*, went to take Possession at *Estremoz*. This Change of the General was not at all pleasing to the Count of *Schomberg*, who had hop'd, that either they would not have sent any to be above him, or would have continu'd with him the Marquess of *Marialva*, with whom he could have better agreed, than with the Other. The Count of *Villafior* was chosen to this Charge, as the most able and successful Officer of *Portugal*. In his Youth he had serv'd three Years in *Flanders* in quality of *Sergeant*, and of a *Lieutenant* in a *Spanish* Regiment: Besides they presag'd to themselves success from his Arms, because he had defended *Elvas* against *Don Louis de Haro*. But these Considerations which satisfied the *Portuguese*, could not have appeased the Count of *Schomberg*, had not the most Christian King written to him at the same time to stay on any Terms, to which purpose also he had a Letter from the King of *England*. On the other hand,
the

the Count of *Castel-Melhor*, being solicited by *Colbert du Terron* to use all Means to retain the Count of *Schomberg*, gave him the intire disposal of all the Offices amongst the Foreigners, with Orders to the Count of *Villafior* to accommodate himself to the Sentiments of the Count of *Schomberg* on all Occasions; letting him understand, that it was only for the Glory of *Portugal*, that the Command of their Armies was given to Generals of their own Nation.

Don John being puff'd up with the Success of the last Campaign, during the Winter and the Spring employ'd himself in Solliciting the Court of *Spain* to make great Preparations, alledging for a Motive, that the Rebels had receiv'd powerful Supplies from *England* and *France*, with Ammunition and Corn from *Holland* and *Hamburg*: but perceiving there was not such diligence us'd, as ought to have been, he apply'd himself to get intelligence, in such of the Enemies Towns as he had a Design upon, and to corrupt the Officers of the Rebels: When he thought he had taken such Measures, as could not fail to be attended with Success, he posted up Papers at *Madrid* containing the true State of his Army and Equipage, wherein every thing was particularly mention'd in high and bombastick terms. The Council of *Spain* not only highly approv'd of what was done by *Don John*, but believing it would prove effectual for reducing *Portugal*, communicated to their Friends and Allies the infallible success of their Designs, as if all had been already done. Moreover at this time, there were great Rejoicings in *Spain* for the Marriage of the *Infanta* to the Emperor.

The Spaniards began this Campaign, by laying waſt all about *Campo-Mayor*, in which Town they had Correfpondents, who being diſcover'd, were apprehended and ſent Priſoners to *Lisbon*. Upon the 7th and 8th of *May* they aſſembled their Army at the *Caya*, being about 7000 Horſe and more than 12000 Foot, with 40 Days Proviſion, and ſtore of Ammunition and Baggage. In this Condition they began their March to *Eſtremoz*, where the *Portugueze* had not above 1500 Horſe, and 4000 Foot.

Don John found at firſt no perſon to oppoſe him; but as he drew near to *Eſtremoz*, he was entertain'd for two days ſucceſſively, with ſharp Skirmiſhes, which oblig'd him to March more cloſe, and in a Poſture to fight: Upon the twelfth, he encamp'd by the River *Tera*; whence the *Portugueze* concluding that he deſign'd to lay Siege to *Ebora*, omitted nothing that might conduce to ſtrengthen that Place. Upon the 13th he march'd under *Ebora-Monte*, which is a ſmall Town that ſtands on a high Hill, two Leagues from *Eſtremoz* and four from *Ebora*, enclos'd with a ſingle Wall wherein is a Caſtle: he ſummon'd it to ſurrender, but *la Cote* an old *French* Officer, who commanded there, answer'd him ſo reſolutely, that *Don John* march'd away without attacking it, and the next day coming before *Ebora* laid Siege thereto.

Ebora is a large City ſtanding on a Plain, encompass'd with a pretty good Wall, without other Defence but a *Falſe-Bray* which ſurrounds the Place, having neither Flanks nor Moat: they had begun to build ſome Baſtions, and alſo a kind of Citadel, on that ſide where ſtands the Convent of *St. Anthony*; but nothing was finiſhed.

ed. There were in it about 3 or 4000 Citizens able to bear Arms, and as many Soldiers, who had been put therein for its defence. *Anthony Henriquez de Miranda* the Governour had undertaken to make a vigorous Resistance, as also a certain *French* Man, whom the King of *England* had sent to *Don Alphonso* as an able Engineer: Notwithstanding which, the Governour pretending a slight Wound in his Head, which he receiv'd about the beginning of the Siege, was no more to be seen in publick. The *Portugueze* believing on good Reasons that the Place might hold out more than a Month, made no great hast either to send Relief or make a Diverfion. But all in general, whether at *Lisbon* or on the Frontiers, were for giving Battel to the *Spaniards*. To this Intent, the Marquess of *Marialva* was order'd immediately to make up an Army at *Aldea Gallega* of all the Militia, who had Orders to march upon urgent Occasions, and of all others he could draw together, and in a few Days he had near 4000 Men: but he delay'd for some time to march, pretending that he was not yet strong enough.

In the mean time there was a great Consternation at *Lisbon*, and neither the favourite Minister, nor the great Men of the Court would hear of any thing but a Battel; and therefore sent several Expresses in a day to their General Officers to fight the Enemy. These general Officers also themselves were forward in shewing their desire thereof, insomuch that this Opinion appear'd as if a general Frenzy had seiz'd upon every one. Upon the Frontiers there was nothing that oppos'd this impetuous Torrent but the Count of *Schomberg*; as *Colbert du Terron* and *Fremont* did

at *Lisbon*. *Fremont*, perceiving that this Inclination to give Battel, was now become too strong to admit of any rational Conviction, after much consideration went one Morning to *Colbert du Terron*, and told him, That now he was of Opinion that it was expedient they should become of their Party who were for fighting; because if the *Portuguese* should contrary to the Opinion of the Foreigners fight and gain the Battel, then they would condemn them; but if they lost it, they would lay the blame upon them who were against it, as not having acted their Part: and moreover, that to agree with their Opinion in this, was the Way to gain Credit among them, whereby they would be the more enabled to do them better service for the Future.

Colbert du Terron approved not at all of this Advice, and continu'd to affirm, that to give Battel, was, to put all the Kingdom on one throw of the Dice: that as for himself, he fear'd not the Consequences thereof, having his Vessel always in a Readiness to sail. But it was otherwise with the Count of *Castel-Melbor*, who was overjoy'd to find *Fremont* of his own Opinion; wherefore he entreated him with great Earnestness, to go to the Frontiers, and perswade the Count of *Schomberg*. This Enterprize was not without Difficulty, he being oblig'd to pass near unto *Ebora*, which was besieg'd by the *Spaniards*. When *Fremont* was come to *Aldea Gallega*, where he expected a Guard, the Marquess of *Marialva* would not so much as allow him a Guide: but *Fremont*, who would not return, tho' he neither knew the Language nor the Country, continu'd his Journey by the Direction of his Map, accompanied with a person of Good Courage. He came to *Montemor* without

without meeting any Body, and from thence went to *Estremoz* with some Cavalry that were going thither; where after he had declar'd his Reasons to the Count of *Schomberg*, he brought him over to his Opinion. They went immediately to the Count *de Villafior*, who forthwith called the Council of War, where *Fremont* deliver'd the Orders of the Court to fight the Enemy, to which they all unanimously agreed.

They had long expected the coming of five thousand Men from *Beira*: but hearing yet no certain News of them, that same Evening all the Infantry march'd out of *Estremoz*, and the next Day the whole Army departed, impatiently waiting for tidings from *Chauvet*, who some days before had been sent out with 200 Horse, to throw himself into *Ebora*. All that the *Portugueze* at this time knew of their Enemies, was, that for 12 or 15 days past they had fir'd no Guns on the Town, whence they concluded that the Rumour of their marching from *Estremoz*, had made *Don John* raise the Siege, and think of saving himself by retiring into *Castile*. With this Imaginary Good Fortune, they mightily pleas'd themselves, and when they met on the Way, would embrace and congratulate one another upon the approaching Victory. They march'd only one League this Day, and encamp'd on the Bank of the *Terra*. The next Day, the Count of *Schomberg* being in the Van-Guard met with *Don Pedro Pissingo*, the famous *Sicilian*, who had been concern'd in the Revolt of *Naples*, and who at this time was Colonel of a Foot-Regiment in the *Portugueze* Service, which was a part of the Garrison of *Ebora*. The Count of *Schomberg* was surpriz'd to see him, and demanding news of the Siege, he told him that

the Town was surrendred, and so went on without giving any further account of particulars, which were so dishonourable.

The Count of *Schomberg* made a Halt, to wait the Coming up of the Count *de Villafior*, who a little while after appear'd on horse back in silk Stockings, cloath'd, as if he had been to make his entry into a City, with a Garment of green Mohair cover'd with gold and silver Lace, a green Scarf, and his Hair, after his Country Fashion, ty'd before and behind, because of the Heat. *Know you not*, said the Count of *Schomberg* to him, *that Ehora is taken?* Too well, answer'd the General, *and what now remains for us, but to be knock'd on the Head with them?* then spurring on his Horse, he seem'd as if he had been in haste to give a Charge: about four paces from thence he alighted and lay down under an Olive-Tree; but that place being too hot to hold a Council in, they removed under the Shade of a Chappel situated upon the bending of the Hill, on which stands *Ehora Monte*.

It was surprizing to see what a sudden Change there was in the Minds of all; for tho' but a moment before every one was for fighting the Enemy, with which Intention they were now upon their march to find them out; yet of all the sixteen Persons that made up this Council, not so much as one now gave their Vote for a Battel, but were for sheltering themselves behind the Mountains and observing the Enemy. This Opinion was first propos'd by the Count of *Schomberg*, and unanimously agreed to by all: but being it was contrary to the Sentiments of the Court, it was resolv'd that every one should write and sign his Opinion at the Bottom of the General's Letter. This occasion'd much Trouble, and took up the rest of the Day
and

and a part of the Night ; for the *Portugueze* *Grandeas*, and among others the Count *de Sabugal*, tho' only a single *Voluntier*, claim'd a right to sign before the Count of *Schomberg*.

So great and so sudden a change in this Council, as to pass in a moment, as it were, between the two contrary Extremes of an Opinion, will be thought less strange if we consider, that in *Portugal* all Offices, Employments and Benefices, are bestowed as Rewards for Services done, so that every one is careful to improve all Occasions to their own Advantage : now they set a great Value upon the Advice they give in Council, and demand an Act thereof, whether it hath been followed or not ; these Acts they preserve carefully, and produce them when ever they petition for any Favour.

About ten a clock at night, the Council being broken up, as the Count of *Schomberg* went to Supper, *Simon de Sousa* Colonel of the *Armado*, which answers to our Regiment of Guards, whisper'd him in the Ear, that there was a great Insurrection at *Lisbon*, where a *Spanish* Faction endeavoured to supplant his Brother the Count of *Castel Melhor*, and to become Masters of the City ; on which the Count of *Schomberg* rose from Table, and went with him into another Tent, sending for *Fremont*, where they concluded, that *Fremont* should immediately depart for *Lisbon* together with *Henrick Enriquez de Miranda*, that they might assist with their Advice the Count of *Castel Melhor*. The next day they arriv'd at *Lisbon*, and landed at the Storehouses. From thence *Fremont* went alone through the whole City to the Palace, meeting only such Persons as were carrying away the Citizens, who had been kill'd

by the Seditious: Tho' several call'd to him from the Windows to make his Escape, yet without ever hastening himself the more, he went on, to the Palace, where he found all the great Men mightily alarm'd at the Insurrection; the Cause and Consequences of which I shall now declare.

The People, who in this Country are mightily pleas'd to talk of Affairs of State, were greatly enrag'd to see the second City of the Kingdom besieged and taken, whilst the Marquess of *Marialva* remain'd with his Forces at *Aldea Gallega*, and went not to Joyn the Army, insomuch that they began first to murmur, and then openly to declaim against the Government, saying; That the Example of the deceas'd King *John* should be imitated, who so soon as he heard of the Battel of *Monteja*, and that the *Spaniards* design'd to enter *Alen-Tejo*, went immediately down to the Port, and passing the *Tajo*, said with a loud Voice, that whosoever lov'd him would follow; so that in a Trice the King had such a Considerable number about him, that the Enemy thought good to retire: that this was an illustrious Precedent and worthy to be followed. At the same time one of these Declaimers drawing a Line with his Sword in the Dust of the great Square of the Palace where they were, said, *Whosoever loves his Country and will fight for it, let him follow me over this Line*: Immediately upon this the Spectators pass'd over, and gathering fresh Courage, they distinguish'd themselves by their Gestures and Voices. The Novelty of the thing occasion'd in a Moment a great Concourse of People; and this being done, under the King's Windows, where the numbers perpetually increas'd, the Mutineers began to cry out aloud, calling on their Prince, and earnestly entreating him

him to put to Death the Traitors that were with him, and instantly to lead his Faithful Subjects against his Enemies. The King shewed himself in a Balcony encompass'd with the Grandees, the Marquess of *Marialva* being at his side, who thinking to appease the People, said to them; *How comes it to pass, Gentlemen, that you call me Traytor, I who am one of the Deliverers of my Country, and who exposed my self, to deliver you from the Castilian Chains? Why then am I a Traytor?* Here-upon the Multitude cry'd out with one Voice, *Trahidor, no. Ladron, si.* insinuating, that he had appropriated to his own Use a part of a great Sum of Mony, that had been rais'd some Years ago to fortify *Lisbon*.

The consequences of this Sedition were so much the more to be fear'd, because the like had never happen'd in this Capital City; and besides, all things seem'd to be carried on with a good agreement and mutual Understanding. The Seditious being assisted by those of the *Spanish* Faction, spent the rest of the Day, in plundering the House of the Marquess of *Marialva*, and some others; and the next day were busied in the same manner, going all in a Body; and altho' in this Order they were present but in one Quarter of the City, yet were all the others also in great fear and consternation. Nothing was seen, as I said, but the People who carried away the Wounded or the Dead: Wherefore it was thought expedient to make a Procession, tho' yet all was not quieted, by which a perfect Tranquillity was restor'd to the City, after two Days and one Night's Trouble. Notwithstanding, all the Mony that was taken at the Marquess of *Marialva's*, where were the Portions of his two Daughters put up in Bags, was

found again by means of the Confessors, to the value of almost 2000 Livers; as also his Silver Plate; which we mention to the Praise of the *Portuguese*.

The Ambition of *Don John*, having now become Master of *Ebora*, surpass'd all bounds, insomuch that he permitted his Creatures to give him the Title of King of *Portugal*: He neglected to detain the *Portuguese* Officers of the Garrison, but gave them their Liberty to go where they pleas'd: He sent his Cavalry towards *Alcacer*; who after they had taken it, set fire thereto and retir'd; whereas had they kept that place, they might from thence have gone to *St. Ubes*, where there were two Bastions yet unbuilt. During the 6 or 7 days that *Don John* remain'd at *Ebora*, he went every Morning to see those that labour'd on the Fortifications, where he stay'd till eleven a Clock; which yet gave no Interruption either to the Flatteries of his Courtiers, or the other Divertisements wherewith he was entertain'd.

The *Portuguese*, who narrowly observ'd his Motions, had no sooner perceiv'd that he had sent his Cavalry towards *Alcacer*, but the Count of *Schomberg* propos'd to the Count *de Villafior*, to march with the Army in all speed, and get between *Don John* and his Cavalry: but the Slowness of the Councils assembled by the General on this Occasion, together with the heavy motion of the Waggons with the Provision of Bread, which he would have to be drawn by Oxen, was the cause that they arriv'd three hours too late: For being yet half a League from *Ebora*, they saw a great Dust beyond the Town, which was rais'd by the *Spanish* Cavalry as they enter'd their Camp. This Suspense and Irresolution of the Count *de Villafior*,
was

was very unfutable to a War of this Nature, that required much Dispatch and Activity.

The *Portugueze* thus missing of their Design, the Count of *Schomberg* went to view the Camp of *Don John*; and perceiving that the *Spaniards* were putting themselves in order of Battel, he repass'd the *Eugebe* about a League from *Ebora*. This Rivulet, as most part of those of *Alen-Tejo*, is dry'd up early, there being no Water to be seen, but in the deep Ditches. Scarcely had the *Portugueze* encamp'd beyond that River, but they discover *Don John* of *Austria* a coming, who had concluded from this sudden Counter-March of the *Portugueze*, that they were afraid to encounter with the Body of his Army. Wherefore he posted his Men upon the same River, planted his great Guns, and began to fire in the Evening, continuing to do so all Night. The *Portugueze* unaccustom'd to such rude Entertainment, complain'd mightily; and the Count *de Villafior*, not contenting himself to say, that the Count of *Schomberg* had unseasonably expos'd the Army, left it; and finding a Way which lay low, assembled there a Council of War. This Action of the General was of so bad an Influence, that more than five hundred Auxiliaries deserted that same Night. Whilst the Count of *Villafior* was taken up at Council, and in sending Expresses to Court; the Count of *Schomberg* that same Night, tho' the Darknes was great, remov'd the Army to a Ground that was lower and nearer the River, where it was both less expos'd to the Enemies Guns, and at a more convenient Distance to Charge the *Castilians*, should they attempt to pass the River, which was every where fordable, save near unto two Mills. By this Motion the Count of *Schomberg* brought nearer his Right Wing, which before was at too great Distance,

Don

Don John, having ply'd his great Guns all Night, made his Army march at break of Day by the Right; and detaching 3 Batalions of Foot, sustain'd by as many Squadrons of Horse, they pass'd the River at a place, where the Water took not the Infantry above their Knee. Here the Fight was very obstinate; for the Count of *Schomberg* had led to this Place two Regiments of *English* Foot, which he had plac'd very near, to support the Cavalry of his Left, which extended hitherto. These *English* Foot stop'd the *Spaniards*; but all their Army marching in *Batalia* to pass the River, the Count of *Schomberg* found himself oblig'd to draw out his Troops from the Valleys, where he had posted them for shelter, to march along by the *Spaniards*, discovering at the same time twelve Field-pieces that fir'd as they went along, favoured by the Ground, which was much Higher than that of *Don John*. These Guns did so good Service, that after a brisk firing on both Sides for half an Hour, *Don John* perceiving a Part of his Men that had past the River beaten back again, began to make his Army march by the Left, coasting always the *Eugebe*. The Ground on that side was pretty level, rising only a little towards *Ebora*, till you come to the Place where it begins to be covered with Trees and Vineyards.

The Count of *Schomberg* did in like manner, marching to the Right in two Lines up the side of the Rivulet, or rather its Channel, the *Portuguese* Cannon firing all the while, and doing great Execution, tho' the Ground was very unequal; which was owing to the Skill of *Desfontaines*, a *French* Officer who commanded the Artillery: Many *Spaniards* were kill'd by the Cannon, among whom were some Officers of Note. After both Armies had

had thus march'd one quarter of a League ; the Ground being now no more advantagious to the *Portugueze*, they stop'd ; but *Don John* continued his March, and pass'd the Channel of the Rivulet at the great Road which leads from *Ebora* to *Estremoz*, then marching by *Pinieres*, he encamp'd in the Plain that day being the 5th of *June*, where he remain'd till the Evening of the 6th, when he had Advice that the Victuals and Ammunition which he expected, were arriv'd at *Aronches* with a Supply of 4000 Men. Wherefore he march'd on the 6th in the Evening straight to *Venta del Duque*, and continued marching all that Night that he might with all speed Join the Recruits.

In the mean time the Count of *Schomberg* was busied on the Evening of the 5th in fortifying his Camp, that he might the better sustain the Assault of the great Body of the *Spanish* Cavalry, if they should fall upon him. On the 6th they abode all Day within Cannon-shot of one another. On the 7th by Break of Day, the *Portugueze* understood that their Enemy decamp'd in the Night, and march'd with great Diligence. They followed them with such Expedition, that they arriv'd at the *Terra* assoon as *Don John*, and encamp'd within half a League of him. The next Day being the Eighth, *Don John* took the Way to *Sousel*, and tho' he express'd his Assurance, that none durst attack him, yet being oblig'd to pass over a Chain of Mountains that kept from him the sight of that little Town, he so manag'd Affairs, that he had taken Possession of these Hills, before the *Portugueze* could be there, where having posted himself, he plac'd his Baggage for Security behind him.

The Hill which was possess'd by the Infantry of *Don John*, who were rang'd in two Lines, had

had the form of a Crescent, and made as it were a Link in that Chain of Mountains. To the Right the Mountain was steep and almost un-accessible; towards the Left it was of a more Easy ascent: upon the Right and Left were plac'd the Cavalry. Between the two Points of the Crescent the Ground fell downwards with a gentle Descent. Just over-against this Crescent was another, the Ground whereof was much of a like Situation. Of this the *Portugueze* possess'd themselves, so that the two Armies were only now separated by a Valley that came between.

It was about six a Clock in the Morning that the *Portugueze* possess'd themselves of the Hills, opposite to those taken up by the *Spaniards*. They began to fire their Cannon, and were going to engage with the Enemy, when the Count of *Villaflor* sent to tell the Count of *Schomberg* to make an Halt; which made all the Army believe, that they had lost the Opportunity of Fighting; and they were confirm'd in this thought, by his making the *Portugueze* commanded by the Count of *Schomberg* to retire, and to Charge four Squadrons on the Rear of the *Spaniards*.

But *Don John* was not at all of this Opinion; for being perswaded that they were going to give him Battel, he caus'd to be published at the Head of his Army; That no Man go out of his Rank, whatever advantage over the Enemy might seem to be got thereby; That all be put to the Sword, so long as there was any of the Rebels standing; and that *Villaflor* be taken alive; who was describ'd that he might be known by all. Notwithstanding the two Armies continu'd facing one another, till four in the Evening, without

out doing any thing, but firing their Cannon.

Whilst the Count of *Villafior*, was busied in holding a Council of War, and sending Expresses to Court, the Count of *Schomberg* put the Army in order of Battel, almost in the same Manner as the *Spaniards*, drawing up his Infantry in two Lines, and placing his Cavalry on the two Wings; then applying himself to observe the Enemy, he perceiv'd that the Baggage, which was collected into a Body began to diminish; wherefore he sent thirty of the best mounted Troopers to discover the Truth, and to see if the *Spaniards* were not making some Motion behind the Mountain. This Party brought Advice that the Baggage of the Enemy were on March, with the Prisoners taken at *Ebora*, two Squadrons being at their Head, and that they held the Way to *Aronches*, being but four Leagues from thence: Upon this he resolv'd, to tell the General Officers who were with him, how he would have things order'd for the Battel, representing to 'em, that to wait any longer for the Resolution of the Count of *Villafior*, would be to let slip this Occasion. His sentiments being approv'd, he order'd *Dionysio de Mello* General of the Horse, to draw all the Cavalry from the Right to the Left, because upon the Right there was a Hill very steep full of Vineyards, which were almost all enclos'd with Walls of dry Stone. This Motion was to be made from Right to Left behind the Hills, that the Enemy might not perceive it: but *Denis de Mello* made so little Hast, that the *Spaniards*, who had suspicions thereof, made also their Cavalry to pass from their Left to their Right behind their Lines, with much more Expedition, and

and came up Just when the first Line of our Horse were going to Charge.

The *Portugueze* had five thousand Horse and between ten and *Eleven* thousand Foot ; and the *Castilians* had twelve thousand Foot, and six thousand Horse, having left at *Ebora* six hundred Horse, and four thousand Foot. The *Spanish* Horse were rang'd in three Lines, and the first Line of these of the *Portugueze*, was supported by three hundred Foot, divided into Plotons of fifty Men a piece : but before I speak of the Horse, I will give an Account of what was done by the Foot.

The Count of *Schomberg* going to Charge at the Head of the first Line of the Infantry ; stretch'd out his Right Wing to encompass a Hill possess'd by the Left of the Enemy ; and 'tis observable, that when they were half up the Hill, the Ascent was so steep, that they could see only the top of the *Castilian* Pikes. The *Portugueze*, however, went forward with great Vigour, tho' not without Noise, some also firing at too great Distance, and without Orders ; but all together receiv'd the Enemies Fire, without being mov'd. So soon as they came up, the *Spaniards* fled, leaving four Pieces of Cannon, and the rest of the Line follow'd their Example.

The four Batalions of *English*, which made up the Left, having on Front the Old Regiments of *Castile*, found much more Resistance ; for six *Castilian* Squadrons, coming to the Assistance of their Infantry, broke one of the *English* Battalions, and the Musquetiers on the Right-hand of another, but the rest of the *English* stood firm. By this time the Left Wing of the *Castilian* Infantry that had given Ground arriving, carried along with them

them the Old Regiments, forcing them to retire to the second Line, which made much less Resistance than the first ; for the second Line of the *Portugueze* gave them no time to recover themselves. The Count of *Schomberg* seeing the Disorder of the *Castilians*, took two Battalions of the second Line, and led them to the Assistance of the Cavalry for their Encouragement, being very much shatter'd.

In the mean time *Don John* bent all his Endeavours to rally his Infantry ; and to make them return to the Charge, he alighted, took a Pike in his hand, and endeavour'd to re-animate them by his Discourse, but all in vain. The Count *de Villafior*, for his part, was a Cannon-shot beyond the Place from whence the Army first parted in order to Join Battel, having with him one Batalion, and a Squadron of his Guards, taking Heaven and Earth to Witness, and the Officers that were with him, that it was not with his Consent that they engag'd to Day, and that his Intention was, that the Fight should have been delay'd till the next Day.

The Fight of the Cavalry was much more obstinate ; for the first Line of the *Portugueze* advancing with too much Hast, gave not the Charge all at one time, insomuch that five or six Squadrons giving Way, the three hundred Musquetiers, that were plac'd in Plotons, were all cut in Pieces ; besides which the second Line at first kept at so great distance, that the broken Squadrons had no opportunity to Rally. Things were in this Condition, when Count *Schomberg* perceiving it, detach'd three or four Battalions of Foot, for the Encouragement and Assistance of his Cavalry.

Whilst

Whilst this was a doing, the Regiment of *Schomberg*, which was the first of the left Wing, by a happy Motion order'd by *de Saussay* who commanded it, charg'd three several times the two Companies of Guards of *Don John*, that were made up of Chosen Men, and Reform'd Officers, which were at last entirely broken; tho' they could not before the third time carry off the great Royal Standard. On this occasion *de Saussay* the Commander of this Regiment manifested an Extraordinary Presence of Mind.

At this time the Count of *Schomberg* passing by the Hill that was possess'd by the Right of the *Castilian* Foot, and observing the *Portuguese* Cavalry much distress'd, he order'd the Remainder of the four *English* Battalions to march with all Speed. This oblig'd him to send again and again to the Count *de Villaflores*, for his Regiment of Foot and his Guards, which had not yet come to the Fight; but the General refusing, the Count of *Schomberg* sent to the Colonel commanding him to obey on pain of Life, which he did, leaving the General with his Guards. These Foot immediately advancing to the Front of the Cavalry, made such seasonable Discharges on the Enemy, that the Horse were no longer able to keep their Ranks, but went all into one Body; and Night being now come on, those behind ran away, and fled by the Compass of the Mountain straight to *Aronches*, and the whole Body soon followed.

The *Portuguese* Cavalry was so harass'd, that there were not above four hundred Horse to be found in a condition to pursue them to *Fronteira*, which is two Leagues from thence. The *Spaniards* in their Flight carried away with them some *Portuguese*, who observ'd one of the *Spanish* Soldiers

diers holding his Stick after the manner of a Guitar, and Singing out aloud, *Quien todo lo quier, todo lo perde.*

The *Spaniards*, notwithstanding gave out afterwards, That they had lost none but such as could not follow; that if the Duke of *St. Germain* had been there, things had gone far otherwise; that the *Portugueze* had lost more than they: and seeing this was not believ'd at *Madrid*, they affirm'd That the Pestilence had reveng'd them on the Rebels, and the Strangers that came to their Assistance, having destroy'd 'em all.

'Tis believ'd that there were not above two thousand Men kill'd on the Field of Battel, where of a fourth or third Part were *Portugueze*. Many of the *Spaniards* were kill'd in the Flight by the Peasants. All their Cannon was taken, and their Baggage consisting of more than six thousand Mules, two thousand Oxen, a great number of Waggon, Coaches, Iron Ovens, with a vast deal of Furniture: about three or four thousand who had been made Prisoners at *Ebora* were retaken, and among others the Colonel *Chauvet*, who was suspected to have hid the Mony of the *Spaniards* in the time of their Flight. There were moreover five thousand Prisoners taken, amongst whom were more than an hundred considerable Officers, and with others the Marquess *de Liche*, the Count *de Escalante*, and *Don Daniel de Gusman*. The Officers of the Regiment of *English* Cavalry, were almost all either kill'd or wounded, among whom was Lieutenant Colonel *Doncan*: many of the *Portugueze* Officers were lost, and some of the Infantry. And now we will leave the Army to its Repose for eight Days, and in the mean time speak a word or two of what pass'd at *Lisbon*.

This Battel, which was fought on a *Friday* in the Evening, being the eighth of *June*, was not known at *Lisbon* till *Sunday* Morning. Never did any News occasion more Joy. One would have thought, the gaining of this Fight had depriv'd the People of their Reason. No Man kept himself within the Bounds of Discretion: From the Magistrates and the Religious, to the very meanest of the People, all were so transported with Joy, that it seem'd as if they had been out of their Wits. However, this Excess of Passion will appear excusable, if we consider, that from thenceforth the Crown of *Portugal* was establish'd in the House of *Braganza*, and *Spain* was now become less than ever in a Capacity to snatch it out of their Hands. I shall not give any particular Account of the Bonfires, the Serenades, the Songs of Triumph, and other publick Marks of Rejoicing, that were every where to be met with for three Days. In a Box belonging to *Don John* that was taken, there was found a great number of printed Papers, which had been posted up at *Madrid* at the Beginning of the Campaign, that contain'd an exact account of all the Forces, Artillery, Ammunition, and of all the Furniture of the Army in general, particularizing every thing, even to the number of Horse-shoes and Nails brought with the *Castilians* for the Conquest of *Portugal*. The Court of *Lisbon*, for their diversion, made the Secretary of State to write at the Bottom of one of these Papers; *We certify that what is herein contain'd is all true, having found it so at the Defeat of Don John of Austria near Estremoz, upon the eighth of June 1663.* but I know not if ever it was sent to *Madrid*. In the same Box was also found a certain Memoire of

of all that *Don John* was to do during the Campaign, and which had been exactly observ'd by him: it was written by the hand of a Stranger, (by Name *St. Columb*) a Prisoner of War in *Spain*, taken from the *Portuguese*. The Esteem which the Favourite and great Men of *Portugal* had for this Stranger, was such, that he was pardon'd, and invited to return, being set at liberty by Exchange.

He was solicited by *Don John*, when he was a Prisoner, to go and proffer an ample Establishment in *Spain*, to the Count of *Schomberg*, if he would change his Party: to which when he answer'd, he was assur'd the Count would never do it; he was impower'd to offer him as great a Pension as that of *Portugal*, which should be pay'd him during his Life, provided he would stand Neuter.

During the time assign'd for refreshing the Army, the Marquess of *Mariavla* came with his Forces, intending to serve as a Volunteer the rest of the Campaign, as also did several other Persons of Quality, desiring to have some share in the sequel of the Victory. Upon the fourteenth, they departed in order to besiege *Ebora*, with the Joy and Approbation of all except the *English*, who refus'd to march, pretending they had not receiv'd their Pay: and indeed much was due to them, because their Pay was great, and it was difficult every Month to raise such a considerable Sum: besides, these Regiments being of the Parliamentary Forces who had serv'd under *Cromwell*, were ever in Mutiny, and were very hard to be govern'd. The Count of *Schomberg* perceiving them to continue in battel Array refusing to obey his Orders, came up to 'em, and order'd some Officers

to be arrested, and a Corporal who was very seditious to be taken and hang'd up immediately : after this the rest comply'd, and the Army came before *Ebora*.

Upon the 17th the Count of *Schomberg* took a view of the Place, and took up one Quarter at *Piniers*, and the other at the Aqueducts of *St. Anthony* : Two Attacks were made, and on the eighteenth the Trenches were open'd. The *Portuguese* had never yet seen a regular siege ; and tho' they had been told, what was to be done in opening the Trenches ; yet an *Italian*, who call'd himself an Engineer, and had been entertain'd by the Court, these four Years, to serve on such occasions, went the wrong way to Work, throwing the Earth upon the Side of the Besiegers : on the twentieth, the besieg'd made a great Sally, with Horse and Foot, thinking to clear the Trenches ; yet they never came up to the front of the Works, tho' they fir'd briskly ; but the *Portuguese* coming out of their Trenches, repuls'd them vigorously : on the twenty first two Batteries were rais'd.

That same Night, two hundred *English*, and three hundred *Portuguese*, supported by one Regiment, were order'd to take the Fort of *St. Anthony*, which accordingly was perform'd, the *Spaniards* having neglected the Defence of the Place, and believing that therefore the *Portuguese* would not regard it : but herein they were deceiv'd, for from the beginning of the Siege, the Count of *Schomberg* had a Design upon it ; which he had hitherto delay'd that it might the better succeed. Within it were five hundred Men, but not being fortifyd, (having in some places only a Palisado)

it

it was easily taken, whereby the Besiegers were further advanc'd than by their Attacks.

This day also two hundred Musquetiers took an old House of the *Carmelites* about fifty paces from the Town-Wall. On the twenty second a Battery was rais'd in the Garden of *St. Anthony*; and on the twenty third the Count *de Satyrane* Governour of the Town capitulated with the Count *de Villafior*; who agreed to let him march out with Arms and Baggage, and four pieces of Cannon, and to give them a guard to *Aronches*, where were *Don John*, and the Duke of *St. Germain*. When the Count of *Schomberg* heard thereof, notwithstanding his usual Moderation, he could not refrain from telling the Count *de Villafior*, that he would never consent to it; that all the Besieg'd should have been made Prisoners of War, as was done by *Don John*, and tho' he had done otherwise, yet this was the least advantage they could expect from having batter'd the Place. He made all this also to be told to the besieged, and then breaking the Truce, he went on with the Siege.

The Count of *Villafior*, incens'd at this procedure, retir'd to his Tent, and came no more out, pretending a Hurt in his Leg; neither went he any more to the Trenches. From this time forth, when ever any was kill'd, this General and those of his Opinion laid all the blame on the Count of *Schomberg*.

This Night a Lodgment was made in the Ditch, and the Miner was set to Work; but being ill posted the Besieged burnt their Works and beat them away. On the twenty fourth a Miner being set to a Tower in the open Day, immediately the Governour demanded to capitulate. The

Count of *Schomberg* agreed, ' That the higher
 ' Officers should march out on Horse-back, or with
 ' their Sword at their side, and the Captains of
 ' Foot on little Nags; that they should all be
 ' conducted to *Badajoz*; that the Cavalry should
 ' be dismounted, and both Horse and Foot made
 ' Prisoners of War for three Months, after which
 ' they should be sent to *Badajoz*.

So soon as this Capitulation was sign'd, the
 Count *de Villaflores* mounted his Horse and rode to
 the Gate of the City; he made it his Business to
 see the Treaty perform'd on all that went out,
 in the mean time seizing for his own Use what-
 ever he could. There came out of the Place more
 than three thousand Foot, and seven hundred
 Horses, which the General distributed as he plea-
 sed, retaining the best to himself, and giving the
 indifferent ones to his Friends, and the rest he di-
 vided to the Troopers that *Don John* had dis-
 mounted, when he took the Place.

All the Arms of the Garrison, being rang'd in
 order along the Walls of a Court belonging to
 the *Carthusians*, occasion'd a kind of Alarm in
 the City: for some Gun-Powder that was by the
 Arms being set on fire, all the Musquets went off,
 and the Pikes and Halbards were blown up into
 the Air; yet was no Body hurt thereby.

After Noon the Count of *Schomberg* having ob-
 served amongst the Prisoners, a great many proper
Germans of the old Imperial Forces propo-
 sed to make them up into a Regiment; which be-
 ing approv'd, between 6 and 700 Men were im-
 mediately list'd; and as their Names were enrol-
 led, every one had four *Cruasdo's* given him. The
 Command of this Regiment was bestow'd upon
 one *Cleran*, who had been an Adjutant General,
 and

and had serv'd a long time in *France* amongst the Infantry : besides he had been formerly very acceptable to the *Portugueze*, by reason of his Skill, and Diligence in fortifying their Towns.

During the Siege of *Ebora*, the *Spaniards* endeavour'd to surprize *Elvas*, by means of Intelligence with some Prisoners of their own Nation, who were taken at the Fight, and sent to the Castle of this Place; but the Design was discover'd. The *Spanish* Horse who were come within a League of the Place, advanc'd as far as *Terrenna*, to Join those they expected from *Ebora*, who not coming, the others lost their Labour.

The day after the Siege of *Ebora*, the Count *de Villaflo* had Orders from the Court, who had understood his Conduct during the Campaign, to retire. To alleviate this Mortification, he received some time after a very signal Proof of his Good Fortune, which I shall here relate, because I shall scarcely have any further Occasion to speak of them. One of the chief Men of *Amsterdam* in a singular humour would wager with every one, That whatever Advantages the *Spaniards* should gain in *Portugal*, this Campaign, they should lose them again, and that whatever they should take, should be retaken; this Man finding he had gain'd much hereby, wrote to the Count *de Villaflo*, entreating him favourably to accept the Sword of the Great *Gustavus* enrich'd with precious Stones, in acknowledgment of what he had made him gain, by defeating *Don John* of *Austria*, and retaking *Ebora*, beseeching him moreover to send him his Picture on Horse-back, with that of the Battel represented as at a Distance.

After the Departure of the Count *de Villaflo*, the Government of the Forces was given to the

Count of *Schomberg*, but not without some Restrictions: and he was also made a Grandee by the King with the Title of the Count *de Mortola*, in acknowledgement of his Services. His Majesty also gave him a Sum of Mony, which tho' small in regard of his Services, yet was not so with relation to the Revenues of the Crown; and as much more was promis'd him whenever there should be a Peace.

I shall say nothing of the Favours bestow'd by the Court on all the *Portugueze*, who were either at the Battel or the Seige, tho' they were very considerable, because only granted to those of that Nation; but nothing was given to any Stranger except the Count of *Schomberg*: and 'tis certain that had he not been of a contrary Religion, they would have granted him great Commandries for himself, and for his Children, and that for ever. For by the Way we may remark, that the Demesns of the Crown of *Portugal*, are divided into Commandries of different yearly Value, from a hundred to ten thousand Crowns, and more. When a Person has perform'd an acceptable Service, the King gives, for Instance, a Commandry of 2000 Crowns, and until one of 'em is Vacant, the Party is pay'd out of the Treasures of the King: When it comes to be Vacant, it must be su'd for as a Benefice: If the Revenue is not so great as the Pension of him who obtains it, the King always pays him what is deficient: but if the Revenue exceeds the Pension, either the King gives what is over to the Pensionary, or assigns it to another.

When a person already in possession of the Government of a Town or Province, which they call a Commandry, does afterwards perform any
notable

notable Action, his Commandry is assured to him for the Life of his next Heir ; and if he renders a third considerable Service to the State, it is giv'n him *de jure* ; that is to say, becomes Hereditary to him, and Heirs Male of his Family, for ever.

The Forces being returned to their Garrisons, Count *Schomberg*, after having taken a turn to *Estremoz*, came to *Montemora*, to see the French Regiment of Foot which had been sent him ; of which I shall speak when I have touch'd a little at the rest of the Motions of this Campaign. From *Montemora*, he went to *Evora*, to hasten the Fortifications of that Place, and thence to take a view of *Montfort Cabessa de Vida Crato*, and *Fronteira*, in order to put those Places in a posture of Defence in case of any insult from *Aronches*. And thence passing by *Castel de Vide Portalegre*, and *Morvaona*, he caus'd a Body of Horse, and 200 Foot, to advance within a League of *Brosse* ; who having taken and pillag'd the Town of *Ferraguela*, and some neighbouring Villages, brought off above 15000 Head of Cattel, while Count *Schomberg*, with some Infantry, kept the Passage of the River, a League from *Valencia* and *Alcantara*, in which were Spanish Garrisons : And after having visited at his return the Posts which were fortifying, and remained some Days at *Estremoz*, he went to *Elvas*, from whence he sent out some Parties towards *Olivenza*, and *Badajor* ; and thence taking the way of *Montfort*, he ordered a small Body of Horse to march in the Night to blow up the Castle of *Cadicera*, betwixt *Aronches* and *Albuquerque* ; but they arriving too late, returned without making any Attempt. In the way Count *Schomberg* halted a considerable time before

Aronches

Aronches in skirmishing with the Garrison of that Place ; and thence returning to *Estremoz*, and afterwards to *Evora*, he there received Permission to go to Court, where he arrived in the latter end of *November*.

But as the Success of the Campaign does partly depend upon the Dispositions of the Court, it will not be amiss to take a view of what pass'd at that of *Portugal* after the Battel of *Estremoz*, till the end of the Year, with relation to the War in *Alenteio*.

As soon as the welcome News of the defeat of the *Castilians* were heard at *Lisbon*, 'twas the general Opinion that the *Spaniards* had receiv'd a fatal Blow which they would never be able to repair, and every body ran to felicitate the King, except *Fremont*, who had no Publick Character : Nevertheless His Majesty was pleas'd to write to him very obligingly upon it. And now while Preparations were making everywhere for general Rejoicing, the Court being irritated at the small resistance the Town of *Evora* had made, when besieged by *Don Juan* ; and seeming resolved to inquire into that Matter, and make example of the guilty, at the Request ev'n of the Inhabitants themselves, as the different Cabals of the *Portuguese*, according to their different Interests and Inclinations, protected the greatest Delinquents, it was soon perceiv'd that all the Storm was to fall only upon one *Frenchman*, whose History (tho' but a very ordinary one) I here shall give you.

The King of *England*, to oblige the *Portuguese*, had sent them in quality of an excellent Ingeneer, a Gentleman of *Piccardy*, more Famous for his Voice than for the *Mathematicks*, and they had thereupon assign'd him a Pension of 50 Pistols a Month,

Month, which they always duly paid him, ev'n when they gave not a Farthing to any body else. Upon the Noise of the *Castilians* approaching *Evora*, he was sent in thither, in hopes that his uncommon Abilities would more than repair the small Experience of the Governour: But the Town was besieg'd and taken without our Famous Ingeni-
 neer's having at all signaliz'd himself; and after the surrender of the Place he still remained in it, till the Day before the Eve of the Battel of *Estremoz*, that he went out of *Evora* to join (as 'twas believ'd) *Don Juan*: but he having decamp'd the Night before that Wretch return'd to the Town, and there remained hidden from the Faithful *Portuguese* that were in the place, till at last *Evora* being re-taken, and the People deliver'd from the *Castilian* Yoke, they quickly found the way to the Gentleman's Lodgings, whither they went with a design to tear him in pieces, some accusing him of having Sold the Town to the *Castilians*, and the most moderate of them having agreed with *Don Juan* to go to serve in *Spain*: But he having made his escape into the Inquisitor's House, tho' that be a Sacred Refuge for all Offenders, the Multitude was still resolv'd to pull him out thence, and Sacrifice him to their Fury. During which vexatious Extremity, the Gentleman having sent to beg Count *Schomberg* to protect him by his Authority, he being busied without the Town in giving the necessary Orders for disarming the *Castilians*, &c. excus'd himself: Upon which *Fremont* (tho' he did not know him) having promised to the Inquisitor to Instruēt the Count de *Castel-Melhor* of the Business, brought things so happily about for that Poor Wretch, that he
 was

was at last sent back to his *Britannick Majesty*, who had sent him thither.

And as few Nations are more extravagant than the *French* when they are out of their own Country, I shall here give one other Instance to justify what I may have occasion to say in the Sequel.

A Gentleman of *Gascoign*, above 50 Years of Age, who being none of the meanest Sort, had seen what passed at the *Pyrenean Treaty*, imagining that nothing was more easie than to make Peace betwixt Two States that were at War together, repairing straight to *Madrid*, boldly offered to conclude a Peace with *Portugal*, provided they would empower him to enter into a Treaty. Which Proposition being there accepted, and a Bill of Exchange giv'n him for 500 Crowns, and as much more in ready Mony, departing from *Madrid*, and imbarking at *Cadiz*, upon his arrival in *Algarva* he was Arrested as a Spy; whence being sent to the Court, and brought before *Fernand de Monteiro*, Chief Judge of such Matters, he was condemn'd to be Hang'd, which had certainly been his Fate, if by *Fremont's* Intercession his Pardon had not been obtain'd, tho' the Judge would never consent to restore the Prisoner, without acknowledging that he had been justly condemn'd.

But now to return from this Digression; it would have seem'd, that after the Victory of *Estremoz*, and the re-taking of *Evora, du Terron* wanted nothing but a favourable Wind to return into *France*; tho' in the main he waited the arrival of the Mony which had been promis'd the *Portugueze*, that he might have the honour of it; and in effect it being come, in spite of all the Perswasions that *Fremont* could make use of to induce him to leave a Part of it in his Hands for the pay.

payment of the *French* Regiment, which was expected every moment, he gave it all to the Count *de Castel-Melhor*, at a time when the want of it would not have been very sensible to the *Portugueze*, who were then Victorious over their Enemies, and had Ten Months time to prepare for the next Campaign ; but he let it plainly enough appear, that he was very indifferent of the *French* Regiment, his chief Aim being only to perswade the *Portugueze* that his Kinsman acquitted himself punctually of what he had made them expect.

Culbert du Teron was no sooner imbarc'd, but Count *Schomberg* and *Fremont* being deliver'd from the constraint of his Presence, they concerted Measures for executing the Design they had form'd before the Campaign, of composing a Body of *French* Horse and Foot, to whom the *Portugueze* should only furnish Bread, Barley, and Straw ; resolving to imploy the Mony they expected in time to come out of *France* for their Payment. And to do this with the more Order, Count *Schomberg* promis'd to be present at all the Reviews the *Portugueze* should make and write down under the Ordinance of the Commissaries, what he thought fit to pay ; and *Fremont* under that Order of the General was to draw another upon the Banker, in whose Hands the Mony should be, to furnish the Sum ordered by Count *Schomberg* ; and to render the Officers unexcusable, if their Companies were not good, it was resolv'd to advance to each a Month's Pay.

Du Teron was yet in the Port when the *French* Regiment arrived extreamly diminish'd by Sick-ness, and the remainder no less fatigu'd by their long abode on board of the Vessels ; so that *Fremont*

mont understanding that there were above 300 Sick, sending a great many Quilts, Coverings, &c. into some of the King's Corn Magazines, upon the brink of the *Tagus* on the North side, which were empty, he ordered Broths to be made for them; and as the Boats landed the Sick, he sent all seasonable Refreshments on board of the Ships, together with Shoes and Stockings for such as wanted; which was no easie Task for one Afternoon, in a Country where the Days are so short, as in *Portugal*; and especially having to do with *French*; who when they arrive in any place expect that all their Necessities should be supplied in a Minute.

As these Troops could not be subsisted without Money in a barren Country, where the Boors can furnish nothing but the Cover, *Fremont* endeavour'd to persuade the Favourite to restore to him a part of the Money which *Teron* had given him for that End; but he represented on the other hand, that that Money had not been giv'n him to be distributed amongst the *French*; but to supply the Necessities of the *Portuguese*, that it was their Business, and none of his, to provide for their Pay; and that to oblige him to pay them, was to give with one Hand, and re-take with the other.

Fremont, who had neither carried thither any Letters of Credit, nor was there invested with a Character that might give him any; nor yet had any Effects that he could depositate upon his obliging himself to go out of *Portugal*, till he had honourably acquitted whatever might be lent him, borrow'd of a Banker 10000 Crowns; and as that Sum could not go a very great length, he gave the Favourite to understand, that he had occasion for some Money for his own Affairs, upon which
the

King lent him at two different times near 6000 *Croisado's*.

So soon as the Trouble and Vexation which former Disappointments had occasion'd, were a little appeas'd, as the Favourite and Secretary of State had experimented the incumbrance and uneasiness of answering the Importunities of the *French* Officers, and the daily Complaints of the People against the Soldiers, perceiving that it would be no easie Matter for them always to undergo such a Fatigue, they propos'd to *Fremont* to take upon him the Charge of all Funds that might come from *France*, and therewith to entertain the *French* Soldiers, rais'd, or to be rais'd, as likewise to the inspection of all the Strangers in the Army, except the *English*. The Body of *French* did then consist of Count *Schomberg's* Company of Guards and Regiment of Horse, of Six very strong Companies, of the Regiment of *Chauvet*, of Three Companies, to which were added Two Companies of *Catalonians*; of the *French* Regiment of Foot of Eleven Hundred Men, and of *Cleran's* German Regiment lately levied at *Evora*.

Fremont, with Concert of Count *Schomberg*, whom he met every Month at the Review's upon the Frontiers, and whom he wrote to every Day, accepted of this Proposition, of which the Favourite and Secretary (who wanted not enough of other Business) were extreamly well satisfied; for till then, they had been continually beset with the *French*, who had always new Favours to ask, and old Pretensions, which were endless; and who, without any Regard or Decency, or to the Customs of the Place, incessantly importun'd the Ministers with their Presence.

Fremont

Fremont did further take upon him the Care of the Deserters, to whom he thought fit, for Reasons of Policy, to give Entertainment; and to such as would not take on, or were not deem'd worthy of being receiv'd in, the Troops free Passage into *France*, or elsewhere; and to begin, he embark'd at once near 500 Prisoners of War, almost all *Italians*, to Publish everywhere the Defeat of the *Spaniards*, and the Generosity of the *French*: To Crown which Action, upon their Arrival at *Rochel*, *Culbert du Teron* ordered him to give every one of them a Crown.

The Favourite, now exalted with so much good Success, and deliver'd from the Care and Trouble of Strangers, beginning to indulge himself, and take pleasure in his Ministry, his Credit daily augmenting at Court, and he there disposing of every thing according to his Fancy, he undertook the building some great Ships, which consum'd a great deal of Treasure, without any other use than that of imploying some of his Kinsmen and Creatures, from which the invidious Courtisans took occasion to form a Conspiracy against him, and affix'd upon the Palace Gate the Names of those they were resolv'd to make away with, chusing for the execution of their Design the Day of the Conception of the Blessed Virgin, upon which the Favourite was advis'd to assemble all the *Eidalgues*, and desire the King to speak to them; but that Advice being rejected, he only sent for some Cavalry to make the Rounds in the City during the Night, because in those hot Countries all Intrigues and Cabals are carried on at that time. But nothing appearing the Day that the Conspirators had chosen for the Execution of their Design, the Favourite

vourite and *Fremont* went out thro' the City, and ev'n to the Country, together in a Coach.

The Preparations for the Solemnity, of which I have spoken, consisted chiefly of a kind of Amphitheater erected in the great Court of the Palace, of which the Buildings form'd Two of the Sides, and the other Two were of a very firm Timber-work of Three Stories. Level with the Ground, in the first Story, were the Seats in form of an Amphitheater, and before these Seats a Rail, upon which lean'd a multitude of People, which is properly the Orchester or Pit : And the Boxes of the Three Stories were hung and adorn'd with Silken Curtains, of which the diversity of the Colours made a very pleasant Show. There might be present at this Spectacle 30 or 40000 Souls, who pleas'd themselves extreamly, ev'n at Noon, and in the Dog-days, to see a Cavalier clad in black Taffeta, fight with a Bull with the greatest Flegm imaginable ; 'tis true, these Combats may be attended with some little Accidents which may please for their Novelty : But after all, they cannot well appear very fine to those that have seen the Spectacles of *France* and *Italy*. This Solemnity was quickly follow'd by the departure of my Lord *Fanchon*, Ambassador from his *Britannick* Majesty, of whom I shall have occasion to speak hereafter.

As soon as it was rumour'd abroad that Money was to be sent yearly from *France*, and that *Maret* and *Briquemaut* were to bring in the Spring-time Officers and Cavaliers to compose each a Regiment of 300 Men, *Chevri*, who was a Captain in Count *Schomberg's* Regiment of Foot, propos'd and obtain'd in *France* (whither he went for that purpose) that another Regiment of Infantry should

be rais'd and paid out of the same Fund, which could not be done without either remitting of greater Summs, or sending the Money *in Specie*, which would have been more advantageous than sending it by Bills of Exchange.

The better to understand this Matter, you must know that the Revenue of the State, added to that of the vacant Bishopricks (which the Pope at the request of the *Spaniards* did not fill up) and the Confiscations being of the new Christians, given by the Inquisition, not sufficient to defray the Charges of the War in *Portugal*, and the Ministry being always oblig'd to fall upon some new Method for raising of Money, after that of marking the Paper, *Fremont* propos'd to buy up at *Cadiz*, at the arrival of the Flota, a quantity of Pieces of Eight, which at that rate might have been had at 55 Pence, and by augmenting (as the Ministers themselves had propos'd) the Money (which they would have new Stamp'd) one Fourth above its real Value, this would have rais'd the Funds one Third: But his Advice was not taken.

That Winter there came to *Lisbon* from *Africa*, an Ambassador who formerly had been first Eunuch of the Women of the late King of *Morocco*. He was sent by a certain Renegado, who during the Confusions of that Empire, had seiz'd the Town of *Santa Cruz* upon the Coast of *Barbary*. And as the Viscount of *Turenne* had acquainted *Fremont*, that they were proposing great Establishments of Trade in *France*, desiring him to make all the Discoveries he could upon that Subject, he treated verbally with the *Moor* in presence of Count *Schomberg*, to have that Town deliver'd to the *French* upon Payment of 100000 Crowns, and for the greater Assurance, resolv'd to go himself

self next Summer, to see whether the Master of the Place would ratifie the Treaty, expecting in that time the Resolutions of the Court of France; and withal, took that Opportunity of informing himself of the *Moor*, whether he could be provided by his Means with *Barbary* Horses, he having oblig'd himself to mount the Regiment of *Brique-maut*, it being then no easie matter to find 300 Horses all at once in *Portugal*.

The *Portuguese* and *Castilians*, to cover some feign'd Marches and Countermarches, they had made the Autumn before towards *Aligna*, had made, at an Interview they had, some Propositions for a Peace, and had promis'd to continue that Negotiation by writing to each other. The most forward on the side of *Portugal* was *John Nugne* of *Acogne*, a General Officer in the Army, who had a lively Spirit, but small Experience; always acting with much Sincerity, but never foreseeing the bad Consequences of a Negotiation. His Management was very Formal and Judiciary, for he never began a Campaign with casting its Horoscope. However, he brought of his own Head Matters to that length, that 'twas already rumoured abroad that all things were agreed on, and the Treaty ready to be sign'd. And as the *Portuguese* were generally inclin'd to Peace, and thought but very little of making a good use of the Advantages they had obtain'd, *Fremont* repairing to the Court at *Alcantara*, remonstrated to the Count de *Castel-Melhor*, That *John Nugne* of *Acogne* had entered into a Treaty with the *Castilians*, without any Orders from the Court; That the *Spaniards* only endeavour'd to lull asleep the *Portuguese*, thereby to gain time to retrieve their Losses, and stop the Progress of the Arms of *Portugal*;

tugal ; so that all those false Measures were broken off, and others more firm concerted betwixt the Favourite and *Fremont*, for they concluded, that without any farther delay they should endeavour to effectuate his Majesty *Don Alfonso's* Marriage with the Princess of *Aumal*, of the House of *Nemours*, and that of the Infant *Don Pedro* with . . . of the *Tour of Auvergne*, Daughter to the Duke of *Bouillon*, and Niece to the Viscount of *Turenne*. There had been formerly much talking of marrying the King of *Portugal* to the Princess of *Dombes Monpensier*, but she wou'd not hear of it when it might have been done ; and when afterwards she was desirous of it, King *Alfonso*, at his Turn, refused it.

The Prosperities of the *Portugueze*, which one would think should have more straitly united those who (after God) were the Authors of them, prov'd Seeds of Discord amongst them, or at least, were the occasion of the breaking out of some Resentments, which perhaps came farther off. The Count *de Castel-Melhor*, after having passed through the greatest Difficulties, the Enemy being Master of the Second Town of the Kingdom, a dangerous Sedition in the Capital, the Army upon the Defensive, and in great Consternation, commanded by a General incapable of that Imployment, now become Victorious and Triumphant, thought only of injoying those Advantages without at all giving ear to the Precautions that were proposed to him for the time to come. Count *Scomberg* on the other Hand, who knew the dangerous Consequences of that Negligence, incessantly represented to the Favourite, that the time that was not imploy'd in making the Preparations for the Campaign was lost ; that Means should be

be fall'n upon to raise the necessary Funds for continuing the Fortifications of Towns, for buying of Horses to remount the Cavalry, and especially the Regiment of *Maret*, which was shortly expected; that Mules should be provided for Transporting of the Artillery, Ammunition and Provisions; and that the *English*, who upon all occasions devoted themselves to the Service of *Portugal*, should be better paid. Inasmuch, that the opposite Sentiments of these Two Grandees, insensibly inspir'd into both such a Contempt for each other, and gave Birth to so much Coldness and Indifferency betwixt them, that 'twas no easie Matter afterwards to reconcile them. The truth is, that the Favourite, for the Glory of his Nation, did not care to let it be known to the World, that the weakness of *Portugal* was the reason why Count *Schomberg's* Demands were not comply'd with; and besides, he was weary of being solicited to his Duty, he that was full of it; for tho' there was but little appearance that any thing advanc'd, at the extremity they scarce ever miss'd of finding a Remedy for every thing; and indeed, it is a Country where all things are done by Miracles; for the *Portuguese* depend with Assurance upon what they Hope, without any other Certainty than a former Instance of such a Piece of Happiness. To which may be added, that it is not with the Kings of *Portugal*, as with other Princes, who in the pressing Necessities of their Affairs can get perhaps Two or Three Year's Revenue advanc'd to them; for on the contrary, that Prince must always reserve a Years Revenue at least of his own in the Treasury, to provide Corn, Barley, Arms, Powder, and all other Necessaries, which he generally sends for from Foreign Countries;

tries, for he not only gives Bread to all his Troops (in which their Pay does principally consist) but likewise to a great deal of his People, and also maintains the most part of the Horses of his Kingdom, which by a great abuse are inroll'd in the Cavalry, tho' few of 'em ever appear there but at Reviews. To avoid the ill Consequences of which Abuse, both as to the Bread and Barley, they have established a Commissary General, who has under him a great many under Commissaries or Clerks, who keep Registers of all the Horse and Foot, where every Man is design'd, by his Name, Sirname, Age, Shapes, Marks, Parentage, and Place of his Birth, marking the Absent at the Reviews, and rebating from their Pay according to the time they have been away. They likewise describe the Horses cutting, the extremity of their Right-ears, and marking them with the *Numero* of the Company they belong to; but all these Precautions have not yet been able to prevent a great many Abuses.

The Court, which ordinarily passes a part of the *Carnaval* at *Salvaterra*, invited this Year Count *Schomberg* thither, where he had not long remained, when he had Advice of the arrival of the Regiment of *Briquemaut*, to whom were immediately furnished near 300 Horses, they having been some time expected. So soon as this Regiment was in a good Condition, Count *Schomberg* return'd to *Estremoz*, whither the Count de *Castel-Melhor*, and the Marquess of *Marialva*, quickly follow'd him. And here it was that tho' Count *Schomberg* was General of the Arms in *Alenteio*, the Favourite would needs have him Consent that the Chief Command shou'd remain in the Hands of the Marquess of *Marialva*, in Quality of Captain General,

General, and that *Gilvas Lobo* should be Camp Master General. The Count of *Castel-Melhor* here assisted at a Council of War, where nothing was proposed but great and mighty Designs; but when means for executing them came to be thought of, every thing was wanting either for a Siege, or ev'n for a simple March, insomuch that they were not in a Condition to make an Excursion towards *Merida*. After which, while the Generals continuing to Sollicit the Court, so to dispose Matters that the Army might be assembled, and begin the Campaign, there arrived 350 Recruits for the *English*, and they daily expected more, which they had need of. The Regiments of Infantry of that Nation were distinguish'd from one another by the different Colours of the Lining of their Cloaths, which having occasioned the cloathing of the *French* Regiment, and *Cleran's* Regiment of *Germans* in Grey, with Linings likewise of different Colours; that was the beginning of all that has been since practiced in *France* of that Nature.

The 10th of *May* were spy'd very far off at Sea; the Vessels which were bringing the Regiments of *Maret* and *Cheuri*, together with Recruits for Count *Schomberg's* Regiment of Infantry, these Ships having passed the Bar, *Culbert du Teron* being aboard of Commadore *Almeras*, said to the principal Sea and Land Officers who were about him, that if any of 'em was so bold as to speak in Favour of *Fremont*, or Protect him in any thing, he should ruin them with the King in *France*; which tho' he confirm'd with Oaths, and very injurious Language, the Count *de Maret*, who went before, and thought himself oblig'd to *Fremont* for his Establishment in *Portugal*,

tugal, sent the Marquess of *Noirmontier* (who was lately arriv'd from *Holland*, another way) to acquaint *Fremont* with *Du Teron's* bad Intentions towards him; which however did not hinder *Fremont* to go a good way out in the River to meet him; who coming into *Portugal* without any apparent Reason, and without the Viscout of *Turenne's* having giv'n *Fremont* any Advice of his Voyage, there was ground enough to believe his Threats.

Fremont, however, soon after landed *Du Teron* just at the Banker's House, where the Money lay, and there offer'd to put all the Funds into his Hands; but he refusing to take the Charge of them, desired *Fremont* to manage things as he us'd to do, and mean time to advance something to the new Regiments, but his wicked Design was visibly painted upon his Countenance, and sufficiently divulg'd by the small Precaution he used everywhere in his Discourse: So that the People now accosted *Fremont* with a melancholy Air, and every Body took a share in his Misfortunes. For he was officiously Good, of easie Access, seeking only the general Welfare, and never refusing to do any Person a Kindness, encouraging and advancing the Portugueze very much in their Trade, and making no other use of the Ascendant he had over the General and the Favourite, but to Protect and Assist those that stood in need of such friendly Offices. However, as his Ruin was believ'd irretrievable, his Company was shunn'd; and if any Advices were given him, they tended rather to intimidate, than to deliver him out of Trouble.

Having enquired of *Du Teron*, Whether he had any Letters for him? And he answering, That he had none. He ask'd him, Whether he thought
it

it most convenient to go to the Army, or stay at Lisbon? To which he reply'd, That he was resolv'd to go to the Frontiers, that he might not have a second time the Mortification, to tell the King that he had not been present at what pass'd in the Campaign; and having ingaged Fremont to accompany him, to Estremoz, the Count of Castel-Melhor bid him, as he was taking his leave of him, to return to Lisbon. *Remember that du Teron was very ill intentioned towards him.*

Du Teron, at his arrival at Estremoz, had a Conference with Count Schomberg, which lasted from Noon to Midnight. They being at that time both a-bed, and du Teron not at all imagining that the Count would rise again that Night, the latter coming privately in his Night-gown to Fremont's Apartment, there told him, as a great Secret, that in all appearance *they had a mind to ruin the Viscount of Turenne in France, and to begin by destroying him, thereby to deprive the Viscount of any Means of making his court to the King upon account of the Affairs of Portugal.* The Count further told Fremont, *that they pretended to convict him of Dissipating the King's Mony, and of Employing a part of it in the East-India Trade for his own Accompt.*

Next Day the Troops were reviewed, and as Fremont had almost ended the giving Orders for their Payment, du Teron having sent to desire him to come up, gave him in entering a Pacquet from the Minister Culbert in presence of Count Schomberg, tho' but Three Days before he had told him, that he had none for him, to which Fremont (having opened and uncypher'd the Letter) answered, *That tho' it was written in Cyphers, and was not sign'd, nor yet did order him to deli-*

ver

ver up the King's Mony into du Teron's Hands, he was ready to do it that Minute ; and pulling out of his Pocket a Scroll of Paper, there is (said he) the Accompt of what I have Received and Disburs'd ; and then tendering him another little Paper, there is the Banker's Note for the remainder of the Mony to ballance the Accompt.

At which du Teron (who as 'twas afterwards discover'd, imagin'd that Fremont would use delays, and shift the delivering of the Mony) being extremely surpriz'd, and not knowing upon what he should exercise the Fury that appeared in his Eyes, he begg'd Count Schomberg to instruct one Gravier, whom he had brought along with him, in the manner of paying the Troops ; which Fremont readily undertook to do, that he might not give the least occasion of forming any Complaint against him that might in any manner disquiet the Viscount of Turenne.

After Dinner, du Teron having told Count Schomberg and Fremont, that he had Orders to deliberate with them of the Affair of Santa Cruz, and to agree to what should be determin'd by the Plurality of Voices, the Count desired Fremont to give an account of the Matter from beginning to end. Which having done, and added to the Recital of his Negotiation the fittest Means to succeed in it with small Expence, and the Advantages that might be reap'd by it, the Count, who was next to give his Opinion, applauded extremely the Advice that Fremont had giv'n, and concluding, that there was no time to be lost. Du Teron only said, That the 100000 Crowns which had been offered, was not such a Trifle as they imagined ; That it was dear buying such a little paltry Town at that rate ; And that
it

it was purchasing mischief very far off; That however he acquiesc'd to their Sentiments, and should write to Almeras and Rabinier (the French Commadore, and Commander of the Marines) to do whatever Fremont should think fit ; withal protesting, that he was intirely averse to the whole Negotiation.

Fremont upon this returning to Lisbon, put Gravier in Possession of the Mony, and afterwards learn'd of the Count de Castel-Melhor that du Teron had assur'd him, That the Viscount of Turenne had now but little Credit in France (if any at all) ; And that if the Portugueze had any thing to desire of His Most Christian Majesty, they would do well to address themselves to another. After which the Favourite gave him to understand, that he being likely to be the Victim of that sudden Change, would do better to leave all, and accept of the Government of Maraynara, which His Majesty King Alfonso offered him.

Upon the breaking up of this Conference, Fremont entered into another with Commadore Almeras, to whom he gave a full account of the design upon Santa Cruz, letting him know the earnest desire he had to conclude the Treaty by the Eunuch's Intromission with the Renegado, and begging the Commadore to Communicate to him the Orders he had receiv'd. Upon which Almeras, after some general Discourse, acknowledg'd that he had Orders to put him ashoar at Santa Cruz, and then forthwith to set Sail and return. By which Fremont being confirm'd of the certainty of the design they had to ruin him without the Viscount of Turenne's Knowledge, instantly pray'd Almeras to carry him into France,
which

which he declined, being obliged to Cruize Two Months towards the *Streights* Mouth.

Tho' the *Portugueze* were surpriz'd that the *Castilians* had not yet appeared, tho' the Month of *May* was already past, it was a very difficult Matter to get them assembl'd in order to a March; which they began the 10th of *June*, and made their first Incampment upon the brink of the *Caya*, where a Council of War being held, it was there resolv'd to besiege *Valencia* of *Alcantara*, the better to facilitate the taking of *Alcantara* itself, the Bridge of that Place being very convenient for passing from *Bejo* to *Alenteio*; Count *Schomberg* being that Night a-bed in his Tent, which stood upon an Eminence, it was pierc'd by several Musquet Bullets from a Party of 30 Cavaliers, detach'd from a Body of Horse which were got together upon an ascending Ground on the other side of the River; upon which the Count getting immediately a Horseback, and Ordered his Guards to answer the Enemies Volley, no Body appear'd.

Next Day having pass'd the *Caya*, they march'd straight to *Valencia*, situate upon a Rock, and surrounded with a Wall, but ill flank'd, having only 4 or 5 little Bastions, and an old Castle within, with some Outworks; but the Ditch avails but little.

They had flatter'd themselves that they would be furnish'd with Provisions from the Towns upon the *Tagus*; but being disappointed, those that were ill intention'd cried out, *Hunger*, desiring that the Siege might be rais'd, and they sent back to their Quarters; alledging, that the Garrison was stronger, and the Fortifications better, than they had at first imagin'd: Whereupon
Count

Count *Schomberg*, that he might not have the Mortification to raise the Siege for want of Bread, agreed with the Marquess of *Marialva* to advance each a certain Sum, with which they bought Ten Days Provisions for the Army.

The Fifth Day of the Siege the Garrison demanded a Capitulation ; but the Besiegers insisting that the Besieged should remain Prisoners of War, the Treaty was broke off, and they continued the Attacks with a design to give an Assault at a Breach which the Cannon had already made pretty wide.

Mean time Count *Marsin*, who serv'd under *Don Juan* (whom he had then left at *Badajoz*) in quality of Camp-Master-General, came and posted himself within Cannon-shot of the Lines, which were then but very ordinary ; besides that, they were thought useless, because the Inequality of the Ground, and the Neighbouring Banks which commanded the Camp, render'd it very difficult to perfect them. However, such as they were, Count *Marsin* remain'd there Two Days, without thinking fit to Attack them ; and returning under pretence that he wanted Infantry, he resolved in his way to demolish the Fortifications of *Aronches*, which had cost *Don Juan* no little Pains, and which did not pass without some Noise, but was not effected at that time.

The Garrison of *Valencia* consisted of a good Regiment of *Castilians*, another of *Italians*, and 500 Militia. However, being somewhat alarm'd at Count *Marsin*'s Retreat, they demanded a Second Capitulation ; but Count *Schomberg* still insisting that they should remain Prisoners of War ; and they rejecting that Proposition, to put an end to all Difficulties, the former resolv'd to give an Assault,

Affault, and for that Effect the *English* (whose Day it was) had Orders to be in a readiness to Attack on the Right, and the *Portuguese* on the Left; but these not coming out when the Signal was giv'n, the other mounted the Breach with so much Bravery, that an Ensign and Five Soldiers were taken Prisoners in the Street of *Valencia*; and the *English* having lost 200 Men at this Attack, that retarded the taking of the Place for Four Days longer; and if they had still persisted to refuse the Garrison the Terms they demanded, they would have lost a great many more; but Count *Schomberg* seeing that the Army had now been Two Days without Bread, thought fit at last to grant the Besieg'd the Capitulation they had at first demanded, which was to March out with Arms and Baggage, with liberty to the Burghers either to go or stay as they pleas'd.

At this Siege was kill'd *du Fay*, Lieutenant-Colonel of Count *Schomberg*'s Regiment of Foot, an old Officer, and a good Soldier, who was suspected to be under some secret Ties with the Ministers of *Portugal*. *Balandry*, who had been a long time *Aid de Camp* to the Camp-Master-General, seeing one Day the Miner chaf'd away, and the Pent-House burnt, going at Mid-day to fix it, and cover it himself, he was there dangerously wounded. He was a very grave, reserv'd, Man, of great Capacity for War, and had extremely distinguish'd himself the precedent Campaign.

This Place having surrender'd the 24th of *June*, *du Teron* left the Camp next Morning, and *Fremont* (without meeting with him) arriv'd there from Court some Hours after his Departure to propose to the Generals the Siege of *Ferciro*, which is a Castle situate upon the *Tagus*, whose Gar-
rison

rison was very troublesome to the Neighbourhood : But the Army wanting Bread, they were oblig'd to retire very speedily, and disperse the Troops into their Quarters without any farther undertaking ; tho' 'tis certain, that if they had had Provisions, they might easily have taken *Albuquerque*.

Towards the End of the Month of *June*, the Duke of *Ossona* taking advantage of the Absence of the Troops of *Beiro*, which were in *Alentejo*, went with 80000 Men and lay down before *Castel Rodrigo* (strong only by its Situation upon a high Mountain, surrounded with pleasant and fertile Valleys) which he batter'd with Nine Pieces of Cannon, there being only 250 Men in Garrison.

Pedro James de Magaliani (of the Race of the Famous *Magellan*, who draws his Origine from *France*) who commanded the *Portuguese* in that Country, having assembled 4000 Foot and 600 Horse at *Almeida*, marching in the Night with that little Army, and Two Field Pieces, with a design to relieve the Place, which was but Three Leagues distant, most of his Men having Red and Blue Caps of the *English* Fashion, which they had made of little Mantles they had taken from the Country Women ; and appearing in the Morning betwixt the Castle and the Besiegers, the latter perceiving their colour'd Caps, were so surpriz'd, that crying out, *Son Ingleres*, they all immediately betook themselves to Flight. And tho' some of the *Castilians* halted at the River of *Aguiara*, the *Portuguese* still pursuing them, took all their Baggage and Cannon, with 1700 Prisoners, many of which were of Note : That Vi-
Story

Story having cost the *Portugueze* only 20 Men Killed, and 6 Wounded.

Much about that time, *Don Juan*, ill satisfied with the Court, and as ill with him, left *Badajoz* with a design to retire. Count *Marsin* seeing by that Prince's Retreat the chief Command devolv'd upon him, resolv'd to begin it by beating up the Quarters of *Cabessa de Vida*. Count *Schomberg* on the other hand, who was not ignorant that Count *Marsin* was of a quick and daring Spirit, had frequently represented to the Count de *Castel-Melhor* that he was in no small Apprehension for the Troops which were in that Place; and having written to *Gilvas Lobo* upon that Subject, made answer to the Count, that Count *Marsin* durst never venture so far in, in the Country, which however he soon after did, and carried off the Regiment of *Cheuri*, and a good part of that of *Briquemaut*; who narrowly escaping with about Sixscore Cavaliers, met in his way *Gilvas Lobo* coming to his assistance, (but too late) for Count *Marsin* had already carried off 200 Prisoners, and Kill'd or Dispers'd the rest.

C. *Marsin* now resolv'd to demolish *Aronches*, *Don Juan* writ to *Madrid*, where he us'd his utmost Efforts to prevent it; but the other's Reasons prevailing, *Don Juan*, to revenge himself, did at last find Means to get him depriv'd of the Command; which however he could not get effected before the razing of *Aronches*, which was about the latter End of *September*.

This Place had cost a great deal of Men and Treasure to the *Castilians*; and Count *Schomberg* having order'd that it should be repaired soon after, put a Garrison in it to cover his Quarters, and pre-

prevent the Incurfions of the Enemy. The *Spanish* demolish'd likewise *Codicera*, but the *Portugueze* did not then repair it.

Fremont, who could not patiently endure that Troops which were but a Month or Six Weeks in Campaign, tho' they were Masters of it, should be pay'd throughout the whole Year, conjur'd Count *Schomberg* to undertake something about the latter end of the Harvest. But he who was extremely distast'd at the small account they made on all Occasions of his Advices, at the Envy they bore him, and at the Disgusts that were daily giv'n him, was no ways dispos'd to give Ear to any thing of that Nature. However, as he was very Ambitious of Glory, he was induced by a great many Reasons to entertain some thoughts of Besieging *Agamonta*; and after several Conferences on that Subject, *Cleran* having receiv'd the necessary Orders and Instructions, was dispatch'd to take a View of the Place, which he (being a very Ingenious and Active Gentleman) easily effected: For taking a Boat at *Merrola* (the Fishermen of either side being good Friends) he approach'd, and sufficiently observ'd *Agamonta*, and so return'd.

Count *Schomberg*, after having seriously reflected on the Report that *Cleran* had made, sent *Fremont* to *Lisbon*, to inspire into the Count *de Castel-Melhor* the design of attacking *Agamonta*, and withal to make the thing appear as if he himself had been the only Contriver of it. To which *Fremont* finding the Favourite very well dispos'd, farther represented to him, That nothing could be more Advantageous to the Kingdom, nor more Glorious to his Ministry; assuring him that the Town and Castle both were open: That

(the *Castilians* not suspecting any thing) there was not above 40 Men in Garrison, that by that means they should deprive the *Spaniards* of 4 or 500 Seamen, which they drew out thence every Year for the *Indies*, that it might be easily kept, being only separated from *Castro Marino* by the River, and that Succours might be easily sent to't by Water from the Towns of *Algarva*. To all those Reasons, in which Count *Schomberg* had the greatest part, *Fremont* added of his own Head several that were more perswasive to the Count *de Castel-Melhor*, agreeing with him, that the Town being taken, the *French* should keep it till the Peace; and obliging himself to Entertain besides the *French*, all the *English* who were very burthensome to the Favourite; and Lastly, that he should pay to King *Alphonso* 100000 Crowns within Three Months after taking Possession of the Place: To all which the Count *de Castel-Melhor* Subscrib'd, upon condition that the Design should be kept secret, and should not be put in Execution till *du Teron* was departed from *Lisbon*; for even from his first Voyage he was generally fear'd and hated by every Body. And the *French* Squadron returning soon after from Cruizing, and he Embarking as every thing was making ready for the Enterprize upon *Agamonta*, the Favourite would needs have *Gilvas Lobo* to be of the Secret, and accompany Count *Schomberg*, and *Henry de Miranda*, to go by Sea with *Fremont* in the Vessels which were to carry thither what was necessary to fortifie themselves upon their Arrival, or defend themselves in case they were Attack'd.

Count

Count *Schomberg* mean time caused the Troops to march off from several Places to certain Rendezvous, where they always found new Orders, and then departed to put himself at their Head.

While all this was a carrying on with a great deal of Secresie and Joy, the Favourite taking one Night *Fremont* to the Secretary's Office, oblig'd him to write to Count *Schomberg* to return to his Quarters, because King *Alfonso* and his Minister, for Reasons which they thought important, would not allow him to undertake any thing against *Agamonta*; and the Orders of the King (which this accompany'd) contain'd in Substance, *That, there being no absolute Certainty of succeeding, His Majesty did not think fit that he should go any further.*

Count *Schomberg* ever since he heard that *Gilvas Lobo* and *Henry de Miranda* were to be of the Expedition, suspected that the Court did not design it should go on, because he could not be perswaded that they would embark themselves in the Vessels with Ammunition and Provisions, and the Regiment of the *Armada*; and besides, he apprehended that the *Portugueze* would be jealous that the Strangers offered to keep that Post. However, the Count having receiv'd His Majesties Letter at *Bejo*, was so sensibly touch'd at that Counter-Order, that he then positively resolv'd to leave the Service of *Portugal*; and he had scarce obeyed the Orders of the Court, when he repented of his Obedience.

This unaccountable Proceeding of the Favourite extreamly augmented Count *Schomberg's* Discontents, which *Chauvet* dexterously improving, in hopes to raise himself upon his Ruins, secretly fomented their Differences, entertaining

the Count *de Castel-Melhor* with false Reports of the General, which he (being naturally credulous) easily believed. Besides, that the good Successes which had fall'n out during his Ministry had too much elevated him; for he made no Ceremony to say, that *in Two Years time he had curb'd the House of Austria, which the Power of France had not been able to effect with the Assistance of all her Allies in Five and Twenty.*

Count *Schomberg* coming to *Lisbon*, very much dissatisfied during his Abode in that Place, he liv'd in great Indifferency with the Favourite, and all his Faction. Mean time *Gilvas Lobo* thinking to signalize himself by some great Exploit in his Absence, went out with 1200 Horse towards *Olivenza*, whilst *John de Silva* made an Excursion towards *Talavera*, Four Leagues above *Badajoz*. Of which, Count *Marsin*, who commanded the *Castilians* on that Frontier, being informed, he sent out against them *Don Diego Cavaliero* with an equal number of Men; who meeting the *Portuguese* returning home, loaded with Plunder, Two Leagues from *Campo Mayor*, taking Two Commissaries-General Prisoners, and killing Two Officers, beat the rest, who did not offer to fight, in to the Gates of *Campo Mayor*. But in fine, the Misunderstanding betwixt the General and the Favourite coming to an extraordinary height, as *Fremont* was one Day deploring that Misfortune with the good honest *Portuguese*, who Two Years before had inspired into the Judge of the People the Design of intreating the King to retain Count *Schomberg* in the Kingdom, after His Majesty had granted him Permission to return to *France*, this honest Man desiring *Fremont* to concur with him, undertook
to

to manage the Council of Four and Twenty, and induce their Judge to wait once more upon His Majesty ; which having effectually done, that Magistrate represented strenuously to the King the Discontents that ill-affected Subjects had giv'n to Count *Schomberg*, and the absolute Necessity that there was to retain him still in *Portugal*.

Whether this sudden Change might proceed from the Judge's Harangue, or from any other Motive, I shall not pretend to determine, but as *Fremont* some Days after was advising the Favourite to clear up all Matters with Count *Schomberg*, offering for that effect to bring him once more to the Palace, tho' he had almost forgot the Custom of going thither, the Count *de Castel-Melhor* answer'd, That he was resolv'd to prevent Count *Schomberg*, and go to see him at his House that very Day ; which having done that Afternoon, they had a Conference together, which lasted Three Hours; in which, after they had told each other their Minds, they faithfully promis'd, that without any further Animosity or Resentment of what was past, they should deal sincerely in time to come, and live in good Intelligence together : Upon which, Count *Schomberg* having resum'd the Care of the Affairs of the War, *Fremont*, to alleviate the Favourite's Uneasiness about many Things that were passing upon the Frontiers of *Gallicia*, went himself to that Extremity of the Kingdom ; whence he soon after return'd so well instructed of all Things on that Side, that he perswaded both the Counts of *Schomberg* and *Castel-Melhor* to carry the War into that Province next Campaign. And if the Favourite could not always comply with what might have been expected of him, he was so

much the less to be blam'd; that he had a Prince to govern, who every Day became more insupportable; for not contenting himself to run through the publick Bawdy-houses in the Night-time, he ordered Prostitutes to be brought to *Alcantara*; and the better to hide his Impotency, and the little Necessity he had of such Company, they brought up a young Girl in the Palace, to whom they gave the Name of the *Infanta*. From these obscene Divertisements *Don Alfonso* pass'd to the Love of the Nuns, using very dissolute Discourse before them, and ordering Plays to be acted in the Choir of their Church.

To restrain the King from these and the like Extravagancies, such as were about His Majesties Person made use of the Pretext of a prodigious Comet which had appeared some Days; insinuating, that such Constellations portended the Death of Kings, or Revolutions of States. At which he was so much incens'd, that injuriously exclaiming against the Comet, he gave it infamous Names, and in the height of his extravagant Fury fir'd a Pistol at it.

While King *Alfonso* pass'd his Life in such Exercises in the Company of Persons who helped to perfect the Ruin of his Reputation, his Favourite was endeavouring to destroy the very Persons that had most contributed to his Elevation; and resolving to begin by excluding out of the Court the Friends of such as he had a Mind to pull down, the Count of *Atagouia* happ'ning to draw his Sword in the Palace, the Count of *Castel-Melhor* us'd his utmost Efforts to get him Arrested, with a Design (as 'twas believed) to have him punish'd according to the Rigour of the Law. But that failing, and *Atagouia* ha-
ving

ving some time after answered a Challenge to a Duel, the Favourite caus'd him to be more severely dealt with than the Ordinance against Duels then required. And at the same time being inform'd that the King his Master had written to *Antony de Conti* at *Brasil*, ordering him to return to *Lisbon*, suspecting that *Sebastian Caesar* had been the Author of the Letter, he ript up an old Quarrel against him, and got him banish'd Two Leagues from the Court.

Soon after the Two *Conti*'s arriv'd, and made their Entry into the *Tagus*, with the Noise of the Cannon and Trumpets, but with Orders at the same time to retire to a Place assign'd them in the Country, where the King conferr'd upon *Antony Conti* (tho' absent) a considerable Office in his Household, with a Pension of 1000 Croisado's, giving at the same time a Benefice to his younger Brother, who was in Orders.

Tho' the Count of *Castel-Melhor* did all that was in his Power to prevent the King's seeing of *Conti*, in spite of all his Precautions they met once in a Chapel, and another time in the open Fields; upon which the Count apprehending the Consequences of those Interviews, told the King that he had discover'd by a Miracle a Conspiracy to dethrone him, in which the Favourite involved the Queen, (tho' she was shut up in a Cloister) the Duke of *Cadaval*, (who was at *Ten-tugal*) the Count of *Atagouia*, (whom he had disgrac'd) and *Sebastian Caesar*, and *Antony Conti*, tho' both were banish'd from the Court.

The King being resolv'd to inquire into that Matter, interrogated himself (with his naked Sword in his Hand) *Louis Correa* of *Torrez*, who was the first that deposed. And afterwards

having written a Letter to the Queen, which she return'd without answering or opening it, under that Pretext *Don Theodorus de Mello*, Brother to the Duke of *Cadaval*, was banish'd 50 Leagues from the Court, *Sebastian Cesar* sent to a Convent, and *Antony Conti* to *O Porto*.

After that Inquest had lasted a long time, the Chancellor and other Judges were nam'd to take Cognizance of it; but having assembl'd several times without coming to any Conclusion, they were dismiss'd, and only the Informations kept, which it seems were not material.

The Count of *Castel-Melhor* being then absolute Favourite, and Prime Minister of State, retired altogether into the Palace, where he took a new Apartment, without leaving the Hall, in which he gave his Audiences, which (tho' it occupies but the half of the Pavillion) is certainly one of the finest in the World, having Twelve Tram Windows, with each a curious Balcony; so that in entring you discover on all Sides the Sea, which twice a Day washes the Walls of the Palace, without leaving any Mud, or causing any disagreeable Smell.

And for the height of good Fortune, *Simon de Souza*, Brother to the Count of *Castel-Melhor*, became now the Infant's only Favourite; who, during a Sicknes he had in the Harvest, would accept of no Bodies Services but his; which so much enraged *Don Pedro's* Domesticks, that they all left his Service, but were all oblig'd to return, except his Secretary, in whose Place was substituted *John Roxaz* of *Azevedo*, the Count of *Castel-Melhor's* Brother being made first Gentleman to the Infant, and Intendant over his Household.

The

The same Year there was an Execution at Lisbon; which tho' it be no extraordinary thing where there's Jews, and an Inquisition, I shall here give a brief Account of it.

The Day appointed for that Fatal Ceremony, all the Prisoners are brought out of the Dungeons of the Inquisition early in the Morning, having each a Wax Taper in their Hands, their Heads being shav'd, and they wearing a *Sanbenito*, which is a sort of a yellow Garment, with a large St. *Andrew's* Cross before, and another behind. If under the Cross there is a Face painted in Flames, that designs the Death the Prisoner is to die. The Women are just so cloathed, with the Addition of a white Veil, which does not hide their Faces. On each Hand of every Prisoner marches an Officer (call'd a *Familiar of the Holy Office*) who wear upon their Cloaks the Marks of their Dignity, and in their Hands small Rods, being mostly People of Quality. This long File of Prisoners, who march one after another, is preceeded by some Priests, with a Cross carried before them, and at certain Distances more Crosses and Priests. This dismal Procession marches in a profound Silence by the Spectators, who are generally in a mighty Conternation, and about Six in the Morning enters into the great Court of the Palace upon a solid Theatre, clos'd and cover'd; somewhat longer, and much larger, than a Tennis-Court. At one end is an Amphitheatre, reaching from Side to Side, and rising very high, upon which appear (perhaps) above Sixscore Prisoners, with all the *Familiars of the Holy Office*, who make an amazing Spectacle. Over against the Prisoners in the other end are the Judges of the Inquisition in a Place which

which is hung, and cover'd with a Cloth to walk upon. Betwixt the Two there's a Separation in Form of the Lobby of a Cathedral Church, having at one end a Pulpit, and in the middle a certain Place, into which the Prisoner that is called comes down from the Amphitheatre through a sort of a Gallery, to hear his Sentence, and there kneeling, he has before him the Judges, and a huge Crucifix, there being below the Gallery that leads to the Lobby a Place for keeping such as are condemn'd.

The Action begins by a *Sermon*, tending to the Conversion of the Jews; and the Preacher being come down out of the Pulpit, there goes up an Ecclesiastick in his Place, who reads aloud the Condemnations; which being almost all the same thing, become very wearisome before Six a Clock at Night; till which time they last.

The Prisoners being call'd one by one, each by his Name, so soon as one is set upon his Knees in the Lobby, Sentence is pronounced; beginning first by such as are convicted of using of Witchcraft and Charms, to make themselves be beloved; afterwards upon such as are convicted of Bigamy, and Sins against Nature; and lastly, upon such as are convicted of Judaism; against which last the Sentence runs to this Purpose.

N. N. being well and duly Convicted of Sweeping his Chamber backward; of Cleansing and Lighting his Lamp, and Changing his Linen on Friday Night; of Fasting Queen Esther's Fast, and refusing to Eat Pork, Hare or Rabbet, or any Fish but Shell Fish, we deliver him up to the Secular Power, begging however that all may be done without Effusion of Blood.

In

In which indeed the Clergyman is punctually obeyed for tho' it be ordinarily Seven at Night ; before those Wretches be given up to the Judges, by Nine they're all condemn'd to be burn'd Alive ; which Inhuman Sentence equally fulfils the cruel and equivocating Request of the barbarous Clergyman, and accomplishes the horrible Device that is describ'd upon the *Sanbenito*. Amongst Twelve or Fourteen condemn'd that Day, there being a Youth of Twenty Years, without appearing at all astonish'd after the hearing of his Sentence ; *Come, (said he) let us now Rejoice, for this Day we shall enter into the House of the Lord.* Many others were deprived of their whole Estates, and condemn'd to long and shameful Punishments. Such as are accus'd of Judaizing with their Friends, are generally banish'd to *Castro Marino*. And so far does the Barbarity of the Inquisition extend, that ev'n the Bones of such as Die in Prison, are carried in those Spectacles before the Judges, and being condemn'd to be burn'd with the other Prisoners, undergo the same Fate with them. In a word, this is a very amazing Tribunal, and all Good People in *Portugal* desire nothing so much as to have it abolish'd ; for besides the Horror that naturally attends it, it Chases away a great many of the most Substantial Traders to *Amsterdam, Hamburgh*, and several other Places, whither they Transport a great deal of Treasure, which does no small Prejudice to the *East* and *West India* Trade.

But to return from this Melancholy Digression, *Fremont* after having pass'd Five or Six Months without hearing any News of the Viscount of *Turenne*, in the beginning of this Year received Letters from him dated in the Month of *August*,
in

in which the Viscount advis'd him to return to France. And as Fremont had liv'd in great Familiarity with the Count of Castel-Melhor, whom he had always very assiduously serv'd in very hard and troublesome Times, he sent to desire a particular Interview to take his Leave of him, his Indisposition not permitting him to wait upon him in Publick. Upon which the Favourite taking the occasion of the King's being at a Comedy, not far from Fremont's Lodgings, went himself to see him; after many Reciprocal Civilities, he told him, *That the King his Master never having done any thing for him hitherto, was now resolv'd to begin to give him distinguishing Marks of the Sentiments he entertain'd of his Services, and of the Esteem he had of him, that his Majesty design'd to give him a Procuration to conclude his Marriage with the Princess of Aumal, and generally to commit to his Care the Management of all his Affairs in France and England; That his Majesty would furnish him a Ship to depart immediately; And that for the better furthering of his Business, he would then ease him of the trouble of the Books; which he ordered immediately to be carried away.*

Count Schomberg was extreamly well pleas'd with the Favourite's Civility to Fremont, but next day it began to change, for the Banker of his own Head proposing to Pay in Goods the Monny that Fremont had borrow'd of Don Alfonso, the Favourite answer'd, That he would not restore the Notes he had taken of Fremont without Monny; upon which he was immediately paid.

Fremont (who knew nothing of all this) went the Day following to the Ship, which was a League below the Town, and there he remained Four and Twenty Hours without seeing any Effect

fect of the Count of *Castel-Melhor's* Promises; nor was there any Body sent to Treat or Complement him, tho' it be Customary. But (which was most of all astonishing) he found on board of the Ship, *Pedro of Almeida* intrusted with the Powers and Instructions which had been promis'd to *Fremont*, and the Favourite was gone with the Court to *Salvaterra*, without at all acquainting *Fremont*, which induc'd him to write him a reproaching Letter, which Count *Schomberg* promis'd to cause to be delivered to him.

Fremont, after having been Eight Days beaten by a violent Tempest, return'd by a kind of Miracle into the River of *Lisbon*; and arriving at Count *Schomberg's*, when 'twas believ'd he was got to *Rochel*, finding that his Letter was not yet deliver'd to the Count *de Castel-Melhor*, he took that again, and wrote him another more violent in which he again reproach'd him with Ingratitude, and breach of his Word, but did not get any answer.

Count *Schomberg* sensibly griev'd at *Fremont's* Disgraces, and designing to alleviate them, was the innocent Cause of a greater than any that had hitherto befallen him. He caus'd him to embark himself in an *English* Man of War, and put his Baggage in a little Vessel which was a going to *Havre-de-Grace*. The War was then breaking out betwixt *England* and *Holland*, and the Frigate in which *Fremont* was embark'd, gave Chase to all the Ships she met with, which furnish'd him an excellent Opportunity of revenging himself upon the *Portugueze*, if he had had a mind to't. For meeting with the Vessel in which was *Pedro d' Almeida*, and she refusing to strike, if *Fremont* had not pacified them, the *English* would

would have sunk her; but by his Mediation they only took out what Seamen they found of their Nation aboard of her, and after Five and Twenty Days of stormy Weather, they arriv'd with much Difficulty at *Falmouth*, almost at the same time with the little *French Ship*, which they had not seen for several Days before. *Fremont* remembering Count *Schomberg's* Advices, put his Followers and Equipage on board of that Vessel, and without further delay went Post to *London*, and thence to *Paris*, where he heard Two Days afterwards that the *French Ship* was taken by the *Ostend Privateers*. The King got the Ship restor'd with all its Loading, except what belong'd to *Fremont*, of which (notwithstanding all the Endeavours he could use about it) he could never get any Accompt.

Sandwich To return to the Affairs of *Portugal*, the Marquess of *Sandwich* passing from *England* into *France*, arriv'd at *Lisbon* the 17th of *March*, bringing along with him the Project of King *Alfonso's* Marriage with the Princess of *Aumal*, having also a Power to Treat of the Marriage of the Infant with the Duke of *Bouillon's* youngest Daughter, which first had been projected by the Count of *Castel-Melhor* and *Fremont*. But tho' the King himself did all that was in his Power, and ordered *Rodrigo de Meneses*, *Simon de Souza*, *Rodrigo d'Acogne*, and all his other Favourites, to do their utmost to get the Infant to Consent to't, he would never hear of it, telling them, *That his Majesty might put him to Death, but could not force him to Marry*. Some say that the Marquess of *Sandwich* being then upon his return to *France*, informing himself of the Count of *Castel-Melhor* concerning the Reports which were everywhere spread

spread abroad of King *Alfonso's* Impotency, the Favourite positively assur'd him of the contrary.

Whilst things were thus carried on in *Portugal*, the Marquess of *Carazena* in *Spain* imagining that he should have better Success than *Don Juan*, and Count *Marsin*, after having us'd his utmost Efforts at Court to obtain a Land Army Superior to that of *Portugal*, and a Naval Force considerable enough to Second and Execute his Projects, took Journey from *Madrid* with a great many Persons of Quality, and arriv'd soon after at *Badajoz*; the Duke of *Alveira* going at the same time to *Cadiz*, to give the necessary Orders for the Equipment of the Fleet which he was to Command.

The Noise of these mighty Preparations pass'd quickly from the Frontiers of *Alentejo*, into the heart of the Kingdom; and no Body doubted but the *Castilians* were resolv'd to attack *Setteval* by Sea and Land. Count *Schomberg* taking there-upon occasion to press the Council of War, and especially to importune the Count of *Castel-Melhor*, to cause to repair the Fortifications of *Villa Viciosa*, and take all the necessary Precautions to put themselves in a Condition powerfully to oppose such a mighty Enemy, whose Army (he assur'd them) was very considerably augmented by the Accession of the Old Imperial Regiments of *Switzers* and *Italians*; the Favourite giving Credit to nothing but the uncertain Advices he had himself from *Castile*, imagin'd that the Enemy was very weak, and no ways in a Condition to execute any Enterprize that Campaign, that Minister's greatest Care being to maintain his Grandeur at Court, which the Infant being then likely to indanger, he frequently threw the Favourite

vourite into great Mistrusts. But the *Portugueze* being at last undeceiv'd at the noise of the Marquess of *Carazena's* approach with a mighty Army, all the Provinces sent Succours to that of *Alentejo*, which wanted every thing.

The Count of *Castel-Melhor* laid all the blame upon Count *Schomberg*, who was absent, and the other Courtisans, at his Example, doing the like, the Disgusts which were giv'n him on that Head, were no less troublesome to him than the Enemy. For the good *Portugueze*, which were well intention'd towards him, had remain'd without any Credit or Protection ever since the Queen's retreat. And on the other hand, the *Grandeess* impatiently waited to see the Events, which the Marriage of their King, and the Propositions of Peace, which his *Britannick* Majesty's Ambassador had Orders from his Master King *Charles* to make at *Madrid*, might produce. For tho' *Castile* had hitherto refus'd to treat with *Portugal*, Crown to Crown, and King to King, the Marquess of *Lich*, being then Prisoner at *Lisbon*, entertain'd Secret Negotiations, which afterwards were very advantageous to his Master.

The beginning of this Campaign was not at all successful to the *Portugueze*; for besides that several others of their Parties were worsted, *John de Crato* going out of *Villa Viciosa* to Forage with Eight Companies of Horse, was defeated by *Don Carlos Staffo*.

In the beginning of *June* the Marquess of *Carazena* coming out of *Badajoz*, at the Head of 1500 Foot, and 8000 Horse, after some Days marching arrived before *Villa Viciosa*, which he thought to have taken in a Trice; imagining withal, that in Case he met with any Resistance
he

he might easily be supplied with Provisions, and all other Necessaries, from *Olivenza* and *Gerhomena*, which were but Three Leagues distant.

This Town of *Villa Viciosa* is situated in a pretty large Plain, but not fortified, having (besides the Prince's Palace) only an old Castle with very thick Walls, to which (by Count *Schomberg's* Advice) had been added Five Half-Moons, some Bastions, and a cover'd Way. And there being in this Castle 1600 Men, they gave time to assemble all the Troops of *Portugal* at *Estremoz*.

The Town being straight surrender'd without Resistance, very much facilitated the opening of the Trenches; for notwithstanding all the Instances Count *Schomberg* could make at Court, he could not obtain Permission to demolish the Houses which were about the Castle; so that the Sixth Day of the Siege the *Castilians* became Masters of the cover'd Way and the Counterscarp, upon which (with considerable Loss on their side) they at last lodg'd themselves.

Mean time the Army of *Portugal* being augmented by the arrival of the Forces of *Beira* and *Traos Montes*, under the Command of the Count of *St. John* (a Man of Merit and Courage, who had always distinguish'd himself by his Zeal for his Country, and application to the Affairs of the War; he having been the first that form'd and disciplin'd the *Portuguese*, in imitation of the *French* that Count *Schomberg* had carried thither, and others having follow'd his Example, almost all the Troops of *Portugal* (as well as their Court) are now modell'd very much after the *French* Fashion) the News of the Siege of *Villa Viciosa* determin'd the King and Ministers (who easily foresaw the dangerous Consequences of losing that

M

Place)

Place) to give the Generals reiterated Orders to relieve it, allowing them (if they could not Effect it otherways) to hazard a Battel, so that without any further delay Orders were giv'n to March next Day. And Count *Schomberg*, who had formerly view'd all the Posts about *Villa Viciosa*, finding none more convenient for the Army than that of *Montes Claros*, he gave Orders in Writing to *Denis de Mellos*, General of the Horse, to detach Six Squadrons that very Night, with Orders to them so soon as they came within a League of *Villa Viciosa*, to Post 100 Cavaliers upon the top of *Montes Claros*, from whence it would have been easie to discover the Enemies Motions upon the approach of the *Portugueze* Army; which consisting of 13 or 14000 Foot, and near 5500 Horse, left *Estremoz* the 17th of *June*, and after Marching Two Leagues, halted near some Fountains, both to give the Soldiers time to refresh themselves, and the Rear (which was a little behind taking Bread) time to come up. Mean while Count *Schomberg* advancing, and spying upon the top of *Montes Claros* some Cavaliers was expressing to the Officers about him the Satisfaction he had to see them there; for, said he, we shall now have time enough to make our selves Masters of that Post, when meeting a Party of 30 Horse, they assur'd him, that the Cavaliers he had seen upon *Montes Claros* were *Castilians*. Upon which, calling for *Denis de Mellos*, and asking him what was become of the Six Squadrons he had ordered him to detach the Night before? He answer'd, That he had only sent a Party of 30 Cavaliers with a sure Guide, thinking that sufficient. Yes (said the Count) *that's sufficient to have your Head cut off, for you*

you had your Orders in Writing. In which manner Count *Schomberg* us'd to give his Orders of late, because of the small Experience and Application of the *Portugueze* Officers.

At the same time appeared Ten Squadrons of *Castilians* coming out of a Valley from behind *Montes Claros*, and Ten others following them, soon after were form'd two Lines of Two and Twenty Squadrons each, which cover'd the whole Front of the Valley which widen'd towards the *Portugueze*, who were already within Cannon-shot of the Enemy.

Count *Schomberg* having with extraordinary Swiftnefs observ'd the Ground, began to form his Right about the Ruins of a decayed House, in the Court of which he plac'd a Batallion of *Portugueze*, with Two Pieces of Cannon, (there being to the Right a Stream) stretching out the Army on the Left; he likewise form'd Two Lines, but with such Precipitation, that some of the Troops on the Left were not brought precisely up to their Places.

Count *Schomberg* observing that the Marquess of *Carazena* (who had already form'd his Third Line of Cavalry) was resolv'd to bring all his Horse to the Right, (that not being convenient because of the Vineyards and Fields Inclos'd by Walls and dry Stones) he likewise resolving to do the same; but wanting Cavalry, he mixt amongst the Squadrons Four Batallions of Foot, and so form'd Three Lines of Horse, and a small Body of reserve of Four Squadrons, placing all the rest of his Cavalry on the Right, except Two Squadrons, which were posted on the Left, which was coming up very speedily, while the *Castilian* Horse was marching to charge the *Portugueze*; which being all at the Right, that they might

not lose the advantage of their Ground, did not offer to stir till the *Castilians* were within Twenty Paces. And tho' the Second Line of the *Portuguese* Foot was not yet got into very good order, the first could not then well avoid coming to Blows, where the *Castilian Switzers* engaging the *English Portuguese*, the Combat was very desperate. And there being betwixt the Two a Wall of dry Stones, which separated Two Vines, that being disputed above half an Hour, did happily give the *Portuguese* time to get themselves in order: But that Wall being at last much lower'd by the loss of the Stones, which each Party pull'd out to throw at the Enemy. the Two *English* Battallions passing over it, the *Switzers* notwithstanding remain'd some time unmoveable. And the Two Commanders engaging one another with their Pikes, the *Switzer* had the Honour to kill Mr. *Shelton*, Lieutenant-Colonel to Count *Schomberg's* Regiment of Infantry; upon which Major *Maire* generously, to revenge the Death of his Commandant, attacking likewise the *Switzer* with his Pike, and overthrowing him with such a Blow as the other had giv'n Lieutenant-Colonel *Shelton*, made them equal in their Fate as in their Courage: Whereupon the *English* Battallions at his Example falling upon the *Switzers* with mighty Shoutings, beat them back to their Second Line; which sustaining vigorously the Attack, restor'd the Fight.

Mean time the old *Castilian* Regiments making a continual Fire, and Killing a great many Principal Officers, as well as Soldiers, gain'd Ground upon the *French* Regiment of Foot, and upon that of *Cleran*; so that Count *Schomberg* being Advertis'd that the Left Wing of the *Portuguese* was pretty

pretty much in Disorder, running thither with Two Squadrons of the Body of Reserve, and making them advance about 50 Paces, to take the advantage of some old Walls, he promis'd to send up speedily some Batallions to sustain them, the Cavalry there being useles.

Count Schomberg returning to the Right, where was all his Horse, and finding them within a Pistol-shot of the *Castilians*, show'd the Pikemen of the First Line the way to hold their Pikes, so as the Irons of the Three first Ranks might equally Gall the Enemy; which had a very good Effect; for coming near the Batallion of *Francisco de Silva*, he Remark'd that it remained firm, tho' the Right of the Musqueteers had been already overthrown. The Attack of the First Line lasted above a Quarter of an Hour, and was very furious; for after the First Discharge, they scarce fir'd any more, but fought it out bravely Sword in Hand.

After the *Castilian* Horse had made sundry Attempts to pierce through the *Portugueze* Pikemen, the Regiment of *Rabat* lately come from *Germany*, consisting of Eight compleat Squadrons of the Emperor's best *Cuirassiers*, overthrew most of the Infantry of the First Line of the *Portugueze*, and likewise Broke, and put into Confusion, some Squadrons, tho' they in the first defended themselves very well; but the Second Line of the *Portugueze* made so little Resistance, that while Count Schomberg was changing his Horse, which had been Wounded, all that Encounter'd the Eight Squadrons of *Rabat*, and the Four of *Chalais* and *Fabri*, was immediately overthrown. And if Colonel *Rabat* had not been Kill'd, (which was not known till after the Battel) or if *Don Diego Ca-*

vallero had obeyed his Orders, when the Marquess of *Carazena* commanded him to sustain *Rabat*, the *Portugueze* would have been in danger of being maltreated.

Mean time Count *Schomberg* arriving upon a fresh Horse, and seeing these Three Regiments (which now made together a Body of 8 or 9 Standards) fall desperately upon the Two *English* Squadrons in the Third Line, who had at their Head *Frederick* the Count's Eldest Son, a Resolute and Understanding Gentleman, his Father apprehending that these Two Squadrons could not long resist against so great a Body, Ordered to attack them in the Flanks by Two Squadrons which were at the Right and Left of those *English*, being those of *Maret* and *Briquemaut*, the one Commanded by the Count of *Rosan*, and the other by Major *de la Chatiere*; which latter was Kill'd in the Action. And tho' the Bravery and Resolution of the Two *English* Squadrons, by their vigorous Resistance, gave time to Sap and Undermine (like a Wall) the Flanks of the Enemy; who at last making their way through that Third Line, and the Body of Reserve, they pursu'd the *Portugueze* Cavalry, which was retiring towards *Estremoz* but a Quarter of a League thence; the *Castilians* wheeling about to the Right, and passing behind to rejoin their Infantry, that Junction did not a little astonish the Left Wing of the *Portugueze*, which was already pretty much shaken.

Count *Schomberg*, during the Engagement of the Third Line with *Rabat*, had detach'd Three Squadrons of his own Regiment, ordering them to pass from the First Line to the Third Line of the Horse, where they signaliz'd themselves extraordinarily, there being a great deal of empty Ground

Ground to possess, for more than 1000 Horse of the broken Squadrons that had fled above half a League, and occasion'd the Flight of the Baggage, which arriving at *Estremoz*, News were sent from thence to *Lisbon* that the Battel was lost.

The Prince of *Parma*, who Commanded the First Line of the Enemy in Quality of Lieutenant-General of the Foreign Horse, did all that was in his power to repair it, being extreamly weaken'd by the too great eagerness of the Three Regiments of *Rabat*, *Chalais*, and *Fabri*: But seeing that the Second Line did not come up to back him, and acquainting the Marquess of *Carazena* therewith, he immediately dispatched *Don Diego Correa*, General of the Horse, with Orders to follow the First Line, and sustain it, and likewise to attack some Squadrons of the First Line of *Portuguese*, which yet remain'd intire, being sustain'd by the Batallion posted in the Ruins of the old House, which still resisted against all the Attempts of the *Castilians*.

These Delays gave time to Count *Schomberg* to reinforce his First Line with Four Batallions drawn out of the main Body of the *Portuguese*, together with his own, and the Count of *St. John's*, Guards, tho' they had already charg'd Five or Six times: At which the General Officers of the *Portuguese* (surpriz'd to see him draw out the foresaid Batallions, in presence of the *Castilian* Foot, immediately sent a Detachment to possess their Post with Two Pieces of Cannon, which forthwith began to Fire) sent to tell the Count that they were now no longer able to endure the *Castilians* Fire: To which he answer'd, That he was going vigorously to Attack their

Cavalry; which once being routed, 'twou'd be an easie matter to defeat their Infantry.

The Four Squadrons of *Portuguese*, with as many Field-Pieces, being Posted in the First Line of the Right Wing, Count *Schomberg* order'd that and the Third Line (there being but little left in order of the Second) to march at the same time: And so renewing the Combat, after it had lasted above Three Hours, they charged Squadron by Squadron, while the *Portuguese* Infantry marching on slowly, fired but little. The Squadrons of the First and Second Lines being press'd, and some of them within the reach of the Enemies Pikes, wheeling about, and retiring a little, they immediately return'd to the Charge, whilst at the same time the *Castilian* Cavalry marching up to the Assistance of their Infantry, the Ground there growing narrow, and the Olive-Trees putting them a little out of order, they were oblig'd to pass through a little Valley at the Foot of *Montes Claros*; where tho' they march'd with Order and Resolution, the *Portuguese* Cavalry charging them with a larger Front, they began to be broken and dispers'd amongst the Olive-Trees, where *Don Diego Correa*, General of the Cavalry, leading on a Squadron near a narrow Passage, being overturn'd with his Horse, was taken Prisoner, together with several other General Officers. Upon which Count *Schomberg*, who follow'd the *Castilians* the length of the Olive-Trees, ordered the Batallions (which were now out of Breath) after refreshing themselves a little, to go and join the rest of the Infantry with the Four Pieces of Cannon; and then turning to the Left, to get himself in betwixt the remaining part of the Enemies Horse and
Foot,

Foot, the *Castilian* Infantry immediately fell into Disorder, and was totally Routed. Several that were posted in Vineyards behind some Walls Surrender'd ; and others Retreating to the Park of *Villa Viciosa*, Colonel *Chauvet*, and Count *Meinard* of *Schomberg*, Captain of Horse in his Father's Regiment, who were sent after them, destroy'd the greatest Part, and return'd with Five and Forty Pair of Colours, 4000 *Castilians*, which were retired under a little Fortrefs which the Marquess of *Carazena* had Built upon an Eminence not far off, render'd themselves Prisoners upon the Noise of the Defeat of their Army, and the 1500 Men which were left in the Trenches retiring towards *Gerhumena*, were in their Retreat extreamly harass'd by the Garrison of the Castle, *Don Manuel Caraffa*, who Commanded those Run-a-ways, having been Wounded with a Musquet-shot, of which he soon after Died. But the Battel, which had lasted above Five Hours, had so fatigu'd the Troops, that not being able to pursue the *Castilians* very far, the Marquess of *Carazena*, with some of the Cavalry, escap'd to *Gerhumena*. Count *Schomberg* was for marching in the Night to intercept the *Castilians* at the Passage of the *Guadiana* ; but the Council was so slow, that nothing was concluded, excusing themselves under pretext that they wanted Ammunition and Bread, tho' the Cattel and Bread they had taken from the Enemy might have nourish'd the Army 4 or 5 Days, besides what they would have got in the way, and at the Passage of the River.

There was not above 14 or 1500 Men Kill'd upon the Spot, of which there was at least One Third of the *Portuguese*, or their Allies. There
were

were abundance of Prisoners of Note ; for besides *Don Diego de Correa*, General of the Horse, they took Two Sergeants of Battel, Lieutenants, and Commissaries, and Camp-Masters-General, in abundance, amongst whom was the Count *de Chalais*, who was Wounded. They likewise took 60 Pair of Colours, Two Kettle-Drums, Fourteen Pieces of Cannon, and Two Mortars. There cannot Praise enough be given to all the *Portuguese* that were there, and especially to the Marquess of *Marialva*, and Count of *St. John*, who were mostly at the Head of the Infantry on the Right, where their Post required no less Presence of Mind than Courage and Resolution. As for Count *Schomberg*, he was everywhere ; and being once very hotly engag'd, he got off with his Horse Wounded, and a great many Bullets in his Armour. The Marquess of *Noirmontier*, who was then a Volunteer, extraordinarily signalized himself that Day, and followed the Count where-ever he went. As they were Galloping from one Place to another, seeing after a Discharge abundance of Men and Horses tumbling down from a Mountain, *Don't you think*, said Count *Schomberg*, *that that looks very like the Ancient Battels, in which the World believes the Painter's Fancy has the greatest Share.*

All things being thus over, it was resolv'd to return next Day to *Estremoz*, to dispose of the Prisoners, which were very numerous, and to give them Bread ; for till then the *Castilians* would not hear of any Cartel for exchange of Prisoners. Next Day, the 18th of *June*, all the Colours, Standards, and Partizans of the Captains which were Prisoners, were planted in a Circle before Count *Schomberg's* Tent, with the
noise

noise of Drums, Trumpets, and Kettle-Drums, intermix'd with the joyful Shoutings and Acclamations of the whole Army; at which the Count coming out of his Tent, receiv'd the Compliments of all the Generals, as well as of the Subaltern Officers, who being afterwards dismiss'd into their Quarters, Count *Schomberg* return'd to *Estremoz*.

Never was there together such a glorious and such a short Campaign, since upon their marching from their Rendezvous, they gain'd a great and obstinate Battel, reliev'd a considerable and important Place, some returning that very Night, and the whole Army next Day, to their Quarters; I shall not here pretend to express the Joy and Satisfaction which the News of this Victory caus'd at *Lisbon*; But the *Portugueze* were so much infatuated and overseen, that they took none of the Measures they should have taken. And the Marquis of *Lich*, who still remain'd Prisoner, took thence Occasion to redouble his Diligence in putting every thing in Practice for obtaining a Peace, in which he succeeded so well, that he got Permission to Confer with my Lord *Fanchon*, newly arriv'd from *Spain*.

The Orders of the Court being come, the Count of St. *John* was sent back to *Beira* with his Troops; and while he was going thither, *Furtado* gathering together some *Portugueze*, besieged, took and burn'd, the Town of *Sarla*, (in which were 1100 Foot and 200 Horse) so that nothing now remains to that Place but its Name.

And now the Heats being so excessive, that nothing could be attempted before the beginning of *October*, that Count *Schomberg*, after the first Rains, assembling 1500 Horse at *Campo Mayor*,
with

with a Design to make an Incurſion into *Spain*, betwixt *Talavera* and *Merida*, the Marquiſs de *Carazena*, without knowing any thing of this Project, deſigning at the ſame time to make an Incurſion into *Portugal*, for that Effect had ſent towards *Barbazena* 1800 Horſe, commanded by the Prince of *Parma*; thoſe Two Parties having Advice of one another, almoſt at the ſame time, Count *Schomberg* having already paſſ'd the *Chevora* near *Badajoz*, this oblig'd the Marquiſs of *Carazena* to Countermarch the Prince of *Parma*, with Orders to March ſtraight to that River, and Charge the *Portugueze* at their Return. at a Place where the Paſſages were very difficult; which the better to put in Execution, he ſent him with his own Company of Horſe-Guards, 800 Men commanded by Ten Captains; of which Count *Schomberg* being inform'd, and ſending Two Parties before for Intelligence, one of them being defeated, the other returned to tell him, that they had perceived 20 Squadrons on the other ſide of the *Chevora*, that oblig'd them to make all poſſible haſte to gain that River, which having done, ſcarce were they half paſſ'd over, when they ſaw the *Caſtalian* Squadrons advancing towards the River by the ſide of a Wood. But the General Officers of the *Caſtilians* being of different Opinions, and that of waiting for their Infantry, which was behind, carrying it againſt that of charging the *Portugueze* in their Paſſage, moſt of the latter getting over the River, Count *Schomberg* without loſing any time, or waiting for the reſt, marched ſtraight to the Enemy; who making at that time a little Motion towards the Right, to get near to their Infantry; he made ſo good uſe of that Advantage, that putting ſome Squadrons

Squadrons of their Left in disorder, he press'd them so hard, that they likeways put in Confusion several other of their Squadrons which were drawing up in order of Battel.

After some little Resistance upon the Right, where the Prince of *Parma* was tormenting himself to get his Cavalry and Infantry brought near to one another, his Squadrons being likewise very hotly put to it, overthrew his Infantry, and most of them being taken and brought Prisoners to *Elvas*, with 300 Horse, the rest retired under *St. Christopher's* Fort, within a Musquet-shot of the Bridge of *Badajoz*; upon which the Marquess of *Carazena* coming out of the Place, and pretending at first to give Battel to the *Portuguese*, who had but few Squadrons, and those not compleat, was glad at last to let them pass with a little Skirmishing; the *Castilian* Troops being then, as well as the *Portuguese*, pretty well diminish'd by Battels, Parties, and otherways, the Recruits they expected from *Germany* and *Italy*, not being yet arrived.

When the Inhabitants and Garrison of *Elvas*, (who at first were in a mighty apprehension for Count *Schomberg*, and the *Portuguese* that were with him, being inform'd that all the General Officers of the *Castilians* were march'd out of *Badajoz*, with their Troops against him) heard that he had defeated the Enemy, and was coming to lye in their Town, going a great way out to meet him, they mix'd such joyful Shoutings, Carrells and Acclamations, with the noise of the Cannon, that the *Castilians* were like to go Mad when they heard that the Count himself had been in that Expedition with no more than 15 or 1600 Horse.

Count

Count *Schomberg* at his Return to *Estremoz*; had Orders to render himself immediately at *Lisbon*; and as soon as he arriv'd there, a Council of War being assembled to deliberate of a Proposition made by the Count *de Prada*, Governour of Arms in the Province of *Minha*, for Besieging the Town of *Thuy*, which is only separated from *Valencia* by the River; this last Place being one of the strongest of that Frontier; notwithstanding Count *Schomberg* represented that that Town being the Place of Arms of the *Castilians*, and the Residence of their General Officers, would certainly be well provided with all Necessaries, it was resolv'd to Besiege it without delay; upon which Count *Schomberg* returning to *Estremoz*, sent away the Two *English* Regiments of Foot, and the *German* Regiment, together with some Companies of Horse, and his own Guards, and being arriv'd at the Rendezvous of the Army, as well as the Succours from *Beira* and *Tralos Montes*, they march'd, and the 29th of *October* pass'd the River *Minha* upon a Bridge of Boats, being betwixt 10 and 11000 Foot, and 2500 Horse, of the best Troops in the Kingdom.

The *Castilians* being informed of all those Preparations were assembled at *Thuy*, under the Command of *Don Lewis Podrigo*, and *Pantoge*, Camp-Master-General, where it was resolv'd, that they should provide their Holds without appearing in Campaign. Next Day after the *Portuguese* had pass'd the *Migna*, Count *Schomberg* seeing Two *Castilian* Squadrons on the other side of a Rivulet, advis'd the Count of *Prada*, to Charge them, and pursue them as far as *Thuy*, which was Four Leagues distant, being

being the Place which that General propos'd to the Count to Besiege; but coming within Two Leagues of it, he changed his Resolution; and 'twas not uneasie to remark that he had not been too Prodigal in rewarding his Spies, for he knew neither the Strength nor Weakness of Places, and was but very ordinarily acquainted with the Country; and besides, it was very uneasie drawing the Baggage and Artillery with Oxen in the Month of *November*: So that the Custom of *Portugal* being, that the Governour of Arms of the Province Commands all those who bring any Succours to them; after holding several Councils of War, considering that there were Six Thousand Foot in the Place, and One Thousand Five Hundred Horse without it, all Thoughts of that Siege were laid aside. Upon which Count *Schomberg*, that the Trouble and Expences of the Expedition might not be altogether in Vain, proposed to make an Irruption into the Country, as if they had a Design to Besiege *Bayona* in *Galicia*, from whence they might easily March to *Vigo*, which is a good Sea-Port Town, having but a simple Wall, with a Fort upon an Eminence, in such bad Condition, that they might be Masters of all in Four Days; that being a Place whither it would have been easie to send Succours from *France*, if the *Portugueze* had not been able to do it; since the Year before Three of their Frigats had anchor'd within a Musquet-shot of *Vigo*, and taken several Merchant Ships. Which being determin'd, the *Portugueze* Army passing through the beautiful and fertile Valleys of *Rozal* and *Mignora*, arriv'd the Fourth Day within a Cannon-shot of *Bayona*, and Two Days afterwards incamping within Two Leagues of *Vigo*;

Vigo; the same Night Count *Schomberg* going out with 500 Horse, and as many Foot, to take a view of the Place, he took in his way, without much Resistance, a little Town called *Bofer*, before which there being Four Ships at Anchor. many of the Inhabitants threw themselves into Boats to get aboard of them; in the mean time the Soldiers plunder'd a great many Cases of Sugar, Spiceries, Cloath, &c. finding, amongst other things, some Bars of Silver: And coming before *Vigo*, he found it yet in a worse Condition than he had imagin'd, the Walls being nothing worth at all, and the Fort, which had Four Bastions, was able to defend only one side of the Town; but Count *Schomberg* knowing at his return to the Camp that the Count of *Prada* was not for Besieging *Vigo*, desired that the Council of War might be assembled, in which, after many Debates, tho' none but the Count of *St. John* was of Count *Schomberg's* Opinion, it was resolv'd to March straight thither next Morning; when the Troops being now under Arms, and ready to March, the Count of *Prada* assembled a Council of War, in which he admitted the Colonels, to Excuse himself from Besieging a Place so far out of the way; in which the half of the Day being past without coming to any Resolution, Count *Schomberg* urged there was no Hazard in marching to *Vigo* (which was but Two Leagues off). The *Castilians* assembling but very confusedly at *Thuy*, astonish'd with the Death of their King, and uncertain what Measures they should take in such a Change of Affairs; adding, that if they did March against them, there was nothing to apprehend, since they were Inferior to the *Portuguese* in every thing; so that Marching towards
Vigo,

Vigo, as the Army was about to pass over a Stone Bridge, built upon a Rivulet, within a League of *Vigo*, the Count of *Prada* sent his Brother-in-Law the Count *de Torrez*, to divert the Counts of *Schomberg* and *St. John*, from attacking the Place, representing that they had very little Bread, and only Two Field-pieces; alledging, That the badness of the Roads, occasion'd by the greatness of the Rains, had extreamly fatigu'd the Oxen that drew the Artillery and Baggage; to which the Counts of *Schomberg* and *St. John* gave Answers, That would have satisfied any other than the Governour of the Province; and finding he was not dispos'd to Venture his, offer'd to take the Town with their own Troops; representing that the Walls were no better than those of *Bosiez*, which they had already taken; and that the Booty would not only be considerable for the Soldiers, in the Town, but that by the help of the Barks they might easily take the Merchant Ships, whither the Inhabitants had transported the best of their Effects: The Two *English* Regiments alone offering to put that Design in Execution. But the Count of *Prada* remaining inflexible, would needs oblige them to go to *Purigno*, which is a little Market-Town, where the *Castilians* made their Bisket; and after Two Days tedious marching over a great many Mountains, they found abundance of empty Magazines, the Garrison of *Thuy* having carried off all that was valuable there.

Count *Schomberg* had not only proposed the taking of *Vigo*, but was resolved to March to *Pont Vedro*, which is a large open Village, Three Leagues beyond *Vigo*, where the Army might have got a considerable Booty, and caus'd such

an Allarm in the Country, that all the Province would have gone near to have revolted; *Gallicia* being that of all *Spain* which would be most advantageous to the *Portugueze*, not only because of its fertility, but likewise because Ships might then arrive to their Dominions with any Wind, which will not be possible so long as they have not *Corunna*; besides, that they might in that Case easilier maintain a Communication with *France*, to which they would then be nearer.

The Count of *Prada* now seeing the Siege of *Thuy* impossible, only thought of sending back the Troops which had been design'd for that Service, in order to which he march'd back towards *Villa Nova*. But Count *Schomberg* ill satisfied to return without performing something, having taken a view of the Fort *de la Garda*, propos'd to the Count of *Prada* to Besiege it, to which he at last obtain'd his Consent with much Difficulty, after having employed all his Friends to perswade him to it.

This Fort is situate above a small Town, built in form of a Half-Moon, imbracing a small Haven, pretty near the Mouth of the *Minba*, the Fort it self being a Square, one Third longer than 'tis broad, clos'd with Four Bastions, and cover'd with Nine, having a cover'd Way, and Pallisado's. 'Tis true, that some of those Fortifications were not yet quite compleated.

The Sixth Day of the Siege the cover'd Way was attack'd, where the Marquis of *Ruvigni*, and Count *Charles* of *Schomberg*, (Third Son to the Count of that Name) were the first that enter'd with a *Portugueze* Sergeant, who was immediately kill'd, and (wanting every thing convenient

venient for a Siege) by the help of some Casks they happily found there, they made as well as they could some Shades before a Bastion ; and at break of Day having Summon'd the Place (they desiring time to call a Council of War) Count Schomberg order'd in the mean time Two Miners to be set at Work, and the Capitulation was concluded the 22d of *November*, that providing they shew'd the Governour that those Miners were actually at Work, he should March out next Day ; which was accordingly perform'd, and the Garrison was conducted to *Bayona*, the Hundred Cavaliers being first dismounted, and their Horses distributed.

The Place being well provided with things Necessary, they returned to *Villa Nova*, where they found the *Castilians* incamped in the same Place, where they before had seen the Two Squadrons, within a Cannon-shot of the River of *Minba*; and going to take a view of the Avenues that led to them, after firing some Cannon, and a slight Skirmish, the Night coming on, they retir'd; Count Schomberg, who had been there, propos'd to return at Midnight ; representing, that with Six Squadrons afront, they might beat them back the length of *Thuy*, without any Danger, providing they took some Infantry to keep the narrow Passes and Defiles; adding, that if they did not find the Enemy well posted when they came to *Thuy*, they might attack them before they got into the Place. But tho' the Counts of St. John and Torrez, were of Count Schomberg's Advice, nothing could be obtain'd of the Count of Prada.

Count Schomberg at this time receiving Advice that the Marquess of *Carazena* was entered into

Alentejo, and Besieging *Nudar*; and hearing by another Courier which arriv'd next Day, that he had taken that Place, and burnt *Veros* and *Fron-teira*, he departed immediately with his Troops, and leaving them Two Days afterwards, because they had yet Ten Days march into *Alentejo*, advancing himself with great Diligence that the Enemy might not have time to fortifie *Nudar* at his Arrival upon the *Tagus*, he found a small Body which had been assembled there by his Orders; with which immediately forming the Siege of the Place (it not being yet well repaired) he retook it in Four Days of open Trenches.

Mean time the Marquess of *Carazena* making another Irruption into *Alentejo*, he advanc'd with 4000 Horse the length of the Abby of *St. Aulay*; where hearing that Count *Schomberg* was within Six Leagues of that Place, and not thinking fit to wait his coming, he went back without undertaking any thing, upon which the Count return'd the latter end of *December* to *Estremoz*. And to Crown happily the Successes of this Campaign, so favourable to the *Portugueze*, their Fleet arrived safe from *Brasil*, with several other Ships richly loaded from the *East-Indies*; all these Prosperities being however accompanied with one small Disgrace, one of King *Alfonso's* Frigats being burnt, and another carried to *Cadiz* by the Lieutenant, which all proceeded from some Differences that happen'd amongst the Seamen.

The Misfortunes of the *Castilians* on the other Hand (which were numerous that Campaign) were compleated by the loss of a very good Prince, *Philip IV.* whose Death (which fell out the 17th of *September*) occasion'd mighty Alterations

terations in the Court of *Spain*. His Son *Charles II.* not being yet Four Years of Age, he had declared the Queen Regent, appointing her a Council of Six Persons, being the Count of *Castillo*, President of *Castile*, the Vice Chancellor of *Arragon*, the Cardinal of *Arragon*, Archbishop of *Toledo*, and Inquisitor-General, the Marquess of *Aitona*, a Grandee of *Spain*, and others.

The Cardinal of *Arragon* dying very soon after the King, the Queen Regent extreamly press'd *Don Pascal* of *Arragon* (who had succeeded to the Dignities of the Defunct) to demit the Charge of Inquisitor-General; to which he at last (with much difficulty) consenting at the reiterated Instances of the Queen, she immediately conferr'd it on Father *Nitard*, a Jesuit, and her Confessor; who of a *German* being naturaliz'd a *Spaniard*, and almost at the same time made a Counsellor of State, he omitted nothing to acquit himself well of the Duties of these great Employments, testifying upon all occasions a great desire to relieve the Poor. Besides the other Disgraces of the *Spaniards*, they now began to publish in *France* some Writs concerning the Pretensions of *Marie Theresa*, *Louis* the Fourteenth's Queen, upon a part of the Low Countries, which were answer'd by Doctor *Francisco Ramos* of *Mancono*.

The Court of *Portugal* at this time was so taken up with the Negotiations of King *Alfonso's* Marriage, with the Propositions of a Peace with *Spain* by the Mediation of *England*, and especially with the Infant's continual Endeavours to shake off the Yoke of the Favourite, and shun his dependance, that it was no wonder if the Count of *Castel-Melhor* did not

hearken to the Count of *Schomberg* ; who knowing none of those Intrigues, made his only Pleasure of his Duty. And so departing from *Estremoz* the 8th of *January* with 4000 Men, with a design to beat up the Garrisons of the County of *Niebla* ; and marching the 21st of the same Month at Night from the Neighbourhood of *Serpa*, which belongs to the *Portuguese*, he arriv'd at Break of Day before *Algueria* of *Puebla*, (which is a Market-Town) investing before the Inhabitants knew any thing of the Matter ; and being summon'd to Surrender, there being in the Place 4 Companies of *Guirassiers* of the Regiment of *Rabat*, incorporated into that of *Rougemont*, and 700 armed Peasants, they answer'd, *That they had not been sent thither to Surrender.* Count *Schomberg* mean time (whose Infantry did not come up till Midnight) possessing himself of all the Passes whereby the Cavalry of the Garrison might have escap'd next Morning, went straight to the Town ; and notwithstanding the great Fire of the Besieged, oblig'd them to retire to a large Fort which was made about a Church ; where defending themselves very vigorously, being ready to be forc'd, they were allow'd to go out with their Lives, the Officers and Cavaliers a-foot. And all was plunder'd, except the Church, which Count *Schomberg* himself was scarce able to defend. The Booty was very great, and the 4 Standards which were taken were sent to Court. Next Day they went Two Leagues further to attack *Payamogua*, which is stronger than *Algueria*, there being 4 little cover'd Bastions which might be very well defended ; but they knowing what had happen'd at *Algueria*, held out only 3 Hours, the Governor alone being to be conducted

ducted to *Ayamonta* ; consenting that all the Garrison should be Prisoners of War ; amongst which there was a Company of Cavalry, whose Horses were distributed to the Officers of the Troops.

Solomon, Major to Count *Schomberg's* Regiment of Cavalry (who was since Kill'd in a Party) was left to Command that Place, which remain'd in the Hands of the *Portugueze* till the Peace.

As they would have gone further, Bread failing them, they were oblig'd to march towards *Serpa* and *Moura* ; where meeting with my Lord *Fanchon* in his way from *Castile*, he communicated to Count *Schomberg* a Project of Peace ; which tho' the *Portugueze* would not then hear of, did since take effect by the Intrigues of the Cabals of the Marquess of *Lych*, who was still Prisoner at *Lisbon*, and carried it against all the Representations of *France*, which had already formed the design of attacking *Flanders*, to set up the Pretensions of the Queen. At the same time the *French* Ships came to an Anchor before *Lisbon*, bringing Money, and offering very great Succours to the *Portugueze*, if they would not accept of the Peace ; with Orders to acquaint Count *Schomberg* in particular, That to alleviate the Troubles of his present Services, and to begin to Recompence those he had already done, the King had ordered *Fremont d'Ablancourt* to demit the Command of the *Scotch Gens-d'Arms* in favour of the *Chevalier de Hautefeuille*, resolving to add to 50000 Crowns, which that Knight was to pay, 50000 more, to be laid out on an Estate of that value, so soon as such an one could be found convenient for the Count of *Schomberg*, which did not happen till the Year after.

But what these Ships brought most agreeable to Portugal, was the Confirmation of Don Alfonso's Marriage with the Princess of Nemours, for which the Cardinal of Vendome (who in Quality of Legat *a latere* was to Baptize the Dauphin of France) would give the necessary Dispensation; which was so much the more acceptable, that it had been kept long in Agitation by the Artifices of the Count of Castel-Melhor, who was very apprehensive that his Favour might thereby be impaired; but France being for that Marriage, all the Difficulties he could propose were easily taken off.

The Court being then at *Salvaterra*, the King and Infant received each a Letter from their Mother, in which she advis'd them of the Extremity she was in.

In the Note she wrote to the King, after acquainting him with the Danger in which the Physicians believed her, and that she her self found her End approaching, she desir'd him to order Prayers for her Soul, to pay what she owed her Servants, and to perfect the Foundations she had begun; ending with these Words, *If it please God that I Die without seeing you, I leave you only my Blessing, which is all that remains in my Power; and I dare assure you, that God will not call me to an account for not always treating you as a Son.* Y.M.

Here is what she wrote to the Infant—*There remains so little time for me to live, My Son, that I expect every moment to expire; but being your Mother, I will not finish my Course without giving you my Blessing, I desire you to fear God, and be obedient to your Brother, who now is your All; When I am Dead remember my Soul, since you*

you owe every thing to my Love. The Infant melting into Tears at the sight of this Letter, would have departed as soon as he had read it : But *Don Alfonso* jeering him, would not allow him to be gone, writing both together to tell that they were a-coming ; but the King so amus'd himself in the way, that he only arriv'd the 28th at Night, when the Queen was Speechless ; and having kiss'd her Hand, and asked her Blessing, the Count of *Castel-Melhor*, who was behind him, telling him, 'Twas enough he bid adieu, and retir'd, while the Infant was bathing his Mother with his Tears, the Count of *Souza* carrying him off an Hour after the Queen Died.

That Princess was worthy of great Praise. 'Twas she that determin'd her Husband to accept the Crown ; and the most important Resolutions of that Prince's Reign were owing to her Prudence. During her Regency she had omitted nothing for the Defence of the State : And after she had deliver'd herself from the Snares of her Enemies, she supported with a great deal of Courage and Resolution her Retreat, or rather her Prison.

The Infant sensibly griev'd at the Death of the Queen, penetrated with the Injuries that had been done to that Princess, and unable to revenge himself upon the Authors of them, all he could do was carefully to avoid their Company ; which they easily perceiving, endeavour'd the more to widen the Breach betwixt the King and *Don Pedro*, by renewing the old Story of his aspiring to the Crown, and hating of *Don Alfonso* ; so that the Infant's most innocent Words and Actions were observ'd, most of the Persons he delighted in were separated from him ;

him, and if any of his Creatures solicited any thing at Court, they were sure to reap no success. And to oblige *Don Rodrigo de Meneses* (who was then at the Head of the Parliament) to abandon his Interests, he was depriv'd of that Dignity, and offer'd the Vice-Royalty of the *East-Indies*; but *John Nunha d'Aconha*, who was likewise in the Infant's Interests, accepted it, and went thither with the Title of Count of *St. Vincent*. Here you may remark, that in *Portugal* the Publick Employments and Places of Trust are generally granted but for Three Years; and tho' in *Spain* the Quality of *Don* be common to every Body in *Portugal*, none dare assume that Title but such as the King Confers it upon.

There now remaining about the Infant only *Don Rodrigo of Meneses*, *Simon de Souza*, and *Christopher of Almeida*, which not being a sufficient Train to appear before the Queen; he desir'd of the King that the Number might be augmented, which the King having granted, he sent *Henry de Miranda* to tell his Brother that he might name such as he pleas'd; upon which having chosen *Louis of Silveira*, Count of *Sarzedes*, *Don Vasco Lobo*, Baron of *Alvitz*, *Michael Carlos of Tavora*, General of the Artillery of *Tralos Montes*, and *Lawrence of Lanclaster*, upon his arrival at the Palace he heard that the King had chang'd his Mind, and accordingly *Don Alfonso* sustain'd, That he had not granted any such Permission; reproaching him withal, That if he had it would have been useless, since he was of such an insupportable Humour, that no Body was able to stay about him; upon which, the Infant disoblig'd at this proceeding, went but very seldom to the Council, but the Favourite,

rite, to make his Court to *Don Pedro*, gave him always an Account of what pass'd.

During these Broils at Court, Count *Schomberg* coming out of *Moura*, and passing at *Estremoz*, went straight to the Court at *Salvaterra*, where tho' he fell Sick, his Indisposition did not hinder him to entertain in his Mind the Design he had form'd against *Agamonta*; from which the Count of *Castel-Melhor* endeavour'd mightily to divert him, at the Sollicitations of *Gilvas Lobos*, and *Henry Aurique*, whose Councils the Favourite blindly follow'd.

While every Body was taken up at *Lisbon* with the Propositions of Peace, which were made by my Lord *Fanchon*, with the Preparations for the Reception of the Princess of *Nemours*, and with the Death of the Queen Mother, and its Consequences, the *Castilians* likewise thinking of nothing but sending of their *Infanta* into *Germany* to be Empress, Count *Schomberg* departing from *Lisbon* towards the middle of *April*, without acquainting any Body, and assembling some Troops at *Estremoz*, march'd with 4000 Foot, and 1200 Horse, 4 Pieces of Cannon, and Provisions for 15 Days, with a Design to pass the *Guadiana*, and attack *St. Lucar*, which is under *Mertola*, upon the same River where the Tyde comes up a little.

This Town being situated upon a Mountain, has towards the River Three great Towers, and on the other side two Bastions cover'd with Two Half-Moons. And tho' when the *Portugueze* arriv'd before it, a great part of their Infantry, and almost all their Provisions and Ammunition, were a good way behind, they nevertheless attack'd it; and the Garrison astonish'd to see the
Miner

Miner already at Work, demanded a Capitulation the Third Day of the Siege, when the Cannon was not yet brought over the Mountains, which really was thought impracticable to do at all. This Garrison went out with Arms and Baggage, but no Cannon, there being but Two Four and Twenty Pounders, and Four of less Burthen, in the Place.

Many believ'd that that small Army might have taken *Agamonta*, if it had march'd that length, the Consternation being exceeding great in that Place of the Province, where they had never seen so many *Portuguese* Troops; but the Infantry wanting Bread, all they could do was to make an Irruption with the Cavalry towards *Sevel*, whence the return'd with Two Pair of Colours, having taken a Market-Town call'd *Gibralion*, at the Mouth of the *Odiera*, where they found some Barks, which they plunder'd all, except a little Vessel of *Provence*; which tho' it was loaded with Corn, which there was Contraband Goods, was not touch'd, because it belong'd to the *French*. The Cavalry making an Inroad Three Leagues further into the Country, appeared in sight of *Tray Gueros*, which is one of the finest Places of the Province.

At this time Count *Meinard* of *Schomberg*, Captain and Major of his Father's Regiment of Cavalry, meeting, and undauntedly attacking, (near the Town which was burn'd) the Regiment of Horse of *Rougemont's*, which was retiring, beating them before him the length of Two Leagues and upwards, they at last pretending to defend a Pass there, lost above 100 Horse.

During the Incendie and Plundering of this Place, a *Castilian* Inhabitant, just before stripp'd,
seeing

seeing a *Portugueze* Cavalier upon a Centry before a Church playing upon a Guittar a little out of Tune, begging Civilly the Cavalier to give it him, after having very well tun'd it, said in restoring it to him, *Agora sta templada*, and so continued to walk about with his ordinary Gravity.

This Incurſion ſo much allarm'd all the Neighbouring Country, that a great many open Places (and ev'n Caſtles) ranſom'd themſelves from Fire and Plundering; all which Contributions, together with the Booty, were carefully divided and diſtributed amongſt the Officers and Cavaliers at their return.

The News of the taking of *St. Lucar*, in the richeſt Province of *Spain*, and that of which the *Caſtilians* are the moſt Jealous, arriv'd at *Lisbon*, before 'twas known that Count *Schomberg* was gone thither; but inſtead of rejoicing at it, and writing favourably to the Count, (who made appear the eaſineſs of extending the Limits of *Portugal* on that ſide; repreſenting that the Marqueſs of *Carazena*, notwithstanding the preſſing Inſtances of the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, Governor of *Andalouſia*, made great Difficulty to let any of the Troops go out of *Eſtremadura*) the Favourite reſuming his firſt way of Reaſoning, answered, That it did not conſiſt with the King his Maſter's Conveniency to begin a War in *Andalouſia*, having already enough upon his Hands in fundry other Provinces; which Arguments ſmelt as little of the Politician as the Soldier; for beſides, that the Mountains render *Algarva* almoſt unacceſſible on that ſide, the *Guadiana* covers it, and the *Portugueze* have over againſt *Agamonta*, which is but weak, *Caſtro Marino*, which is a
very

very strong Place, by which on all Occasions Troops and Provisions might have pass'd ; but in the main, there was no great appearance, that after having separated the Strangers the Year before, the *Portuguese* would now allow them to be Masters of a Sea-Port, where (if they would) they might have maintain'd themselves after the Peace, by receiving Succours from *France* and from *Tangiers*, which is over against *Agamonta* ; so Count *Schomberg* making use of his peculiar Vertues of Patience and Moderation , ordered Provisions and Ammunitions from *Mertola* to *St Lucar* ; which leaving in a very good Condition, with 400 Foot, and some Horse in Garrison, after having remained there Eight Days after the taking of the Place, he departed the 5th of *June*, the Troops marching back to *Estremoz*.

About the middle of *June*, the Duke of *Beaufort* coming to an Anchor in the Bay of *Casceys* with Forty Ships, he came ashore and saluted the King, who was to Marry his Neice ; after which putting immediately to Sea, he was scarce got out of the River when the *Castilian* Fleet coming up, and presenting its self before the Fort of *Berlingue*, where there was but 12 Men, they surrender'd it ; and the *Castilians* taking thence some Pieces of Brass Cannon, immediately abandon'd it, and put to Sea.

And now the Queen of *Portugal*, after having been very long expected, at last arriv'd the 2d of *August* in the River of *Lisbon*, being attended by a very strong Convoy of *French* Men of War ; the Marquess of *Ruvigni*, in Quality of Ambassador Extraordinary from his most Christian Majesty, having the Care of the Conduct of this Princess, who was attended by the Bishop and Duke

Duke of *Laon*, whose Second Cousin she was, and many other Persons of Quality, whose Curiosity had inspir'd into them the Design of waiting upon the Young Queen to her new Dominions of *Portugal*.

The King *Don Alfonso* not going to meet his Queen on board of her Ship, as 'twas expected, the Marquess of *Ruvigny* coming to Salute the Infant, he found him only attended by *Don Rodrigo de Meneses*, which put *Don Pedro* into such a Confusion, that he sent immediately to the King, desiring, by the Intermission of the Favourite, that a greater Train of Officers might be allow'd him; representing, that it was for his Majesties Honour; and meeting himself with the King before he had any Answer, he made use of all the Arguments he could to obtain his Desire; which being still refus'd, *Don Pedro* was so exasperated, that he desir'd Leave to retire; to which King *Alfonso* answered, *That he might of himself (if he pleas'd) retire, but that he would give him no Orders for it.*

The Queen being come (as is already said) to an Anchor above the Tower of *Belin*, an innumerable Multitude of People cover'd the whole Brink of the River, so that one would have thought that there was no Body remaining in the City. And indeed there seem'd nothing to be wanting to that mighty concourse of Subjects, but the Prince, who should have been at their Head, if he had understood his Duty, or had been duly sensible of the Merit and Beauty of the Princess which he was to Enjoy. But the Day being almost past; and the People, who having left off the Mourning for the Queen Mother, and cloath'd themselves in their most sumptuous Apparel, expecting

pecting in vain to be honour'd with the Presence of their Prince ; and now impatient (it being towards the Evening) to see what should be the end of the Spectacle, discovering, when they least expected her, (the Sun being now about to Set) the Queen in a Barge, which was bringing her ashore, there now appeared nothing amongst the Multitude but Signs of Admiration, the Air resounded with chearful Acclamations, and Joy was painted on every Countenance : But upon the Princesses Arrival on the Shoar, that the People saw her nearer, that glorious Noise was turn'd into a respectful Silence, which was only interrupted by the reiterated Vows and Prayers of the Multitude, for the Prosperity of her Marriage and her Reign ; the Crouds not leaving her till she was arriv'd at *Alcantara*, where she was receiv'd by the King, and remain'd till she made her Publick Entry into *Lisbon*.

The Count of *Castel-Melhor* founding upon his Credit, (which was now very well establish'd) upon the good Opinion he had of his own Capacity, and particularly upon the reiterated Advices he had from many Parts, that the Queen was resolv'd to live in good Intelligence with him, imagin'd that it would be no difficult Matter for him to gain as great an Ascendant over the Queen, as he had already gain'd over the King ; not doubting but he should soon be able to Govern her, as he always had done him, since the beginning of his Favour, which was at the time of *Conti's* Banishment to *Brasil*. But all the Advantages with which he imagin'd himself (above all others) induc'd, became in time usefess to him, as well by his own Mismanagement of them, as by his Master's fantastical and irregular Conduct with

with the Queen, which it might have been easie to him to have rectified, if he had been willing; but he seem'd to expect that the Queen should have begg'd his Favours at his Hands.

During the Fifteen Days time that the Bishop of *Laon*, and Marquis of *Ruvigni*, remained at *Lisbon*, the *Portugueze* did not neglect to Treat them according to the Custom of their Country; but they were both sensibly griev'd at the Account that Count *Schomberg* gave them of the State of Affairs and Management of the Court of *Portugal*, he having intirely satisfied their Curiosity on that Subject, in the continual Conferences he had with them.

Twelve Days after the *French* Ambassador and the Bishop of *Laon*'s departure, the Queen made her Entry into *Lisbon*; but besides that, nothing Extraordinary then happen'd, that not belonging to my Subject, I shall only tell in short, that the Count *de Maret*, asham'd to see the Queen without Guards upon such an Occasion, having pick't out the choicest Cavaliers of his Regiment, and giv'n them new Coats at his own Charges, they had the Honour to serve in that Quality at Her Majesties Entry; but for his Pains the *Portugueze* laugh'd at him, and 'tis doubted whether ever the Queen took the trouble to thank him.

Tho' ever since the King had refus'd his Brother the choice of the Officers of his Household, the Infant impatiently expected an Occasion of retiring from the Court, he resolv'd not to put that Design in Execution till the Queen had made her Entry. The first time *Don Pedro* went thither, after he had desired Permission to retire, the King banter'd him for not being yet departed;

ted; and the Infant, who was not insensible to all those Insults, being one Day in Coach, having only along with him *Don Rodrigo de Meneses* and *Simon de Souza*, he told them, that some Body did certainly do him ill Offices with the King; adding, that if he thought it was the Count of *Castel Melbor*, he would certainly be reveng'd upon him; which *Simon de Souza* then very warmly defended the Favourite; and hearing the Infant speak another time to the same purpose, he told him plainly, he would serve him no longer if he pretended to Treat his Brother at that rate; refusing at the same time to obey the Infant, who bid him come up into the Coach, tho' *Don Pedro* bid him to take care of what he said and did. And the Favourite soon after going to the Infant's Palace, to Justifie and Excuse his Brother, *Don Pedro* told him flatly, *That he would give no Credit to all his Verbal Protestations till he saw them follow'd by the Effects; and that when he found that he made use of his Interest with the King his Brother, to restore him to his Majesty's Favour, he might be assur'd of his.* As all those things were done in the view of every Body, the more the Infant seem'd desirous of retiring from the Court, after the Queen had made her Entry, the more he was furrounded with Lords and Gentlemen; which gave no small Umbrage to the Count of *Castel Melbor*, who knowing that his Favour was very much envied, began to keep himself upon his Guard.

However, the very Night that the Queen had made her Entry, the Infant, accompanied with *Don Rodrigo de Meneses*, and some others of the Nobility, retiring to his Country-House at *Quelvi*, an Hour's Journey from *Lisbon*, this Retreat (as
all

all other publick Actions) was approv'd of by some, and condemn'd by others. And *Don Pedro* ordering soon after to prepare a House for him at *Almeda*, which is a little Town opposite to *Lisbon*, on the other side of the *Tagus*, that making his Discontents appear the greater to the People, as they are ordinarily inclin'd to favour the oppress'd, they murmur'd very much against the bad Treatment *Don Alfonso* gave his Brother; which the Favourite and his Creatures seeing, and fearing that the *Castilians* being inform'd of those Confusions, and taking their Advantage of them, the Infant might thereby gain the Affection of the People, they resolv'd to use their utmost Efforts to bring him back to *Lisbon*.

At that time the Queen falling Sick, and the Favourite being inform'd that the Infant was to come to pay her a Visit, he engag'd her Majesty to obtain of *Don Pedro* to come to live at Court till she should be recover'd, that he might thereby spare himself the trouble of coming so far to see her; to which *Don Pedro* with much Difficulty consented, leaving all his Equipage in the Country, and still persisting in his Design of passing the Winter at *Almeda*. But the Count of *Castel-Melhor*, during his stay at *Lisbon*, so manag'd things with the King, that the Infant was allow'd, in Case he would renounce his First Choice, to make a Second as he should think fit, excepting only one Person: Which *Don Pedro* after some Ceremony accepting, he chose for his Gentlemen, *Louis Silva Tello*, Count of *Aveiras*; *Don John Mascaregnas*, Count of *Torrez*; *Louis Alvarez Tavora*, Count of *St. John*; and *Manuel Tellez of Silva*, Count of *Vilar Major*; after which, the Infant returning to Court,

Christopher of *Amada* retired, but *Don Alfonso's* Aversion to his Brother immediately return'd, and soon after broke out, as we shall speedily see.

In the beginning of *September*, the Marquis of *Carazena*, by feigning a Design upon *Bejo* and *Serpa*, and by that Means obliging the *Portuguese* to send Troops that way, thereby facilitated to himself the plundering *Veiros*, *Cabessa de Vida*, and other Places, which having forrag'd with 4000 Horse, and 2000 Musqueteers, he return'd with a considerable Booty. Count *Schomberg* while all this was a doing, was at *Lisbon*, where he was detain'd all the Month of *October*, to partake in the great Rejoicings that were making; and that long absence giving occasion to the Marquis of *Carazena* to form a Design upon *Campo Mayor*, knowing that the Garrison of that Place us'd frequently to go abroad, he laid an Ambuscade, into which he thought to have drawn them, but the *Portuguese* not stirring out that Day, the Enterprize fail'd him.

At the same time, the *Portuguese* General of the Horse resolving to enter by Two ways into the Enemies Country, got himself some Booty towards *Olivenza*; but *John de Silva*, who was sent towards *Talavera* with 1200 Horse, to make a Diversion, drawing all the *Castilians* thither, the Prince of *Parma*, who commanded them, remain'd a long time doubtful whether he should attack the *Portuguese*; till remarking that their Rear was marching in Confusion, and charging them very vigorously, tho' the *Portuguese* had had the Advantage in several Skirmishes, in which they had dismounted above Fourscore Cavaliers, seeing the Prince of *Parma* advance with all his Horse, they receiv'd them so faintly, that only

only one Squadron standing firm, it was almost all cut in pieces; so that the first Line being thus overthrown, the Two others (tho' as strong as the *Castilians* who attack'd them) immediately flying, were pursu'd to *Campo Mayor*, losing on this Occasion 400 Horse, but few Officers, except about Twenty that were taken Prisoners, amongst whom was a Commissary-General.

Count *Schomberg* vex'd at this Loss, would have had the Officers who had fail'd in their Duty, made Examples, which not being able to obtain, departing from *Lisbon*, and passing by *Setuval* and *Alcaer*, (his Government extending the length of *Algarva*) he went to *Estremoz*.

And now after *Don Alfonso* had on many Occasions put his Brother's Patience to an end, he gave at last so much way to the Aversion and Hatred he bore him, that 'twas now no more in the Power of the Favourite and Ministers in the least to moderate it; for all *Don Pedro's* Actions seem'd Criminal in his sight, as he plainly made it appear upon a Difference that happen'd betwixt the Marchioness of *Castel-Melhor*, Mother to the Favourite, and Lady of Honour to the Queen, and *Don John* of *Mascaregna*, Count of *St. Croix*, Great Master of the Queen's Household, about their Places; the King saying that he would make them Friends, and Govern his House himself; *Add* (said the Infant) *that you will likewise Govern your Kingdom, and you'll do well.* The King taking that upon the Point of Honour, maltreated his Brother in Words, and throwing himself upon him, if the Queen had not interpos'd, would have struck him. Carrying soon after his Fury a much greater length, one Day, that the Infant being in the Coach with the King and the

Queen, seeing the *Fidalques* a trying their Skill at the Cane Play, not being able to refrain from praising the Marquis of *Marialva*, who was on Horseback with his Brother *Don Rodrigo* at his side, the King, who thought that praising the Marquis of *Marialva*, was despising the Count of *Castel-Melhor*, who was likewise at the Head of a Troop at that Exercise, flew into such a Passion against the Infant, that drawing his Poniard, if the Queen had not a second time interpos'd, he would have lodged it in his Body; so much was he pre-occupied, that all that the Infant said was but an effect of his Contempt of him, that no sooner did *Don Pedro* give his Approbation to any thing, but the King disapprov'd it: And now being absolutely indifferent of his Brother's Satisfaction, he took from him his Almoner, *Joseph de Fonsaka*, refusing him another Ecclesiastick in his Place; and thereupon the Infant, that he might not be any longer expos'd to the Insults of the Court, demanding that he might be put in Possession of the Office of Constable, which belong'd to him; the Favourite and his Cabal fearing that thereby the Infant might become Master of the Army, made Answer, That that Demand was Important enough to be deliberated upon in Council; and mean time they took from the Infant the Count of *Torrez*, under pretence of sending him to raise Troops in *Estremadura*; sending at the same time the Count of *St. John* to the Exercise of his Employment, in the Province of *Tralos Montes*. The Infant notwithstanding of all these Affronts, tho' he could not forget the King's attempt to Poniard him, and from that Moment entertain'd the Design of revenging himself, as the late Queen his Mother had

had projected, continu'd to make his Court, with great Submission; considering withal, that if the Intrigue he was now meditating had been put in Execution when it was first design'd, he would then have been Master of a Treasure he prefer'd to the Crown, and should not have the Dissatisfaction to see such a beautiful Princess so unworthily treated; but he let nothing of that be understood, till afterwards acknowledging it to his Confessor, he likewise, as we shall after see, communicated it to the Queen's Confessor.

After the first Days of the King's Marriage to the Princess of *Aumal*, 'twas observ'd that they were not so fond of one another, as it might have been expected from Persons of their Age. And this indifferency, which at first was only perceiv'd by such as went near their Persons, becoming insensibly, more visibly gave birth to a third Cabal in the Court; so that the Two weaker, as 'tis ordinary in such Cases, joining against the strongest, had the good Fortune at last to Triumph over it. But as all those Intrigues were managed with great Secrecy, and carried on at the same time, we must as much as possible avoid Confusion in discoursing of them. And as each Party took its Advantage of what might hurt the other Two, 'tis fit to tell in what Condition they were, before we relate the Measures they took to destroy one another.

The King, far from abandoning his evil Customs, continu'd no less inhumane than before his Marriage, and every Day gave new Disgusts to the Queen to that degree, that he pretended at last to be in Love with her first Chamber-maid. And as for the Infant, King *Alfonso* join'd to the Envy he had always born him, such an implacable

Hatred, that if there had been any subject of Jealousie betwixt them, the World could have attributed it to nothing else. In a word, his Favourite so absolutely possess'd him that he acted by him alone, so that the horror of King *Alfonso's* Vices did almost all reflect upon the Count of *Castel-Melbor* (who as People pretended) instead of sweetning the Fierceness of the Prince's Temper, and moderating the Excess of his Transports, took the Advantage of his Master's Infirmities to ruin such as durst displease him, and procure to himself and his Creatures the Places which he or they envied; without keeping any Measures with the Infant, and but very few with the Queen herself: For having gain'd one of her Women in which she confided most, (except some appearances of Civility in publick) the King and his Favourite had now no more regard for the Satisfaction of that Princess; shewing themselves upon all Occasions very indifferent of her in particular.

Such unaccountable Conduct of Persons who were in the wrong, gave the Queen insensibly subject to enter into great Suspicions, that some pernicious Design was hatching against her; but the more Reason she had to complain of her Sufferings, the more she was Circumspect in expressing her Resentments; for besides that she knew her Misfortunes were regretted by all that were acquainted with them, she did not think it convenient to trust herself to every Body: And the desire of performing what was expected of her in *France*, did so intirely possess her, that she thought much less of finding Remedies for her Sufferings, than of Means to dissemble them. And tho' she wanted not Disgraces of her own sufficiently

sufficiently to afflict her, she beheld with a great deal of Trouble and Vexation the Injustices daily done to the Infant; and testify'd on all Occasions a great desire of reconciling him to the King, and restoring him to his Favour.

The Infant on the other side supporting very impatiently the Ministry of the Favourite, had conceiv'd, and long entertain'd, an implacable Hatred against himself and his Friends, many of which were not without Reproach. And tho' it should have been satisfactory to him to see the better Sort of People espouse his Interests, the daily Disgraces he receiv'd at Court made him still think himself very unfortunate; for *Don Alfonso* having lately banish'd him to the Country, after having remained there some Days, he could not return to Court without making great Submissions to the King and his First Minister; which gave Occasion to think that at last the haughtiness of the Infant's Spirit had giv'n place to the Politicks of his Creatures, since nothing but some secret and important Reason could have oblig'd him to take that Course: And tho' most People believ'd they penetrated into those dark Intrigues, no Body durst openly speak of 'em.

Things being in this condition in the beginning of the Year, and the Infant ready to accompany the King to *Salvaterra*, he desir'd Permission to take thither a greater number of Servants than he us'd to have; but that (tho' customary) was refus'd him. And soon after the Count of *Torrez*, (one of the Infant's Household) who was raising Soldiers at *Santarem*, finding himself so near the Court, and thinking it his Duty to go thither, happening in speaking of *Don Pedro*, in Presence of the King, to call him Prince, *Don Alfonso* told

told him, *That his Brother was not Prince, but Infant*: Ordering withal Count *Torrez* to return the same Day to *Santarem*. 'Tis true, That the Infant not having been then acknowledg'd Prince by the States, could not in effect take upon him that Quality: But that Complement was pardonable to a Courtisan, in Discourse.

Tho' the King had order'd great Preparations to be made for Hunting, he took that Divertisement but once during his abode at *Salvaterra*; where he frequently pass'd a good part of the Day and Night at the Rounds, with ill Musick, and ill Entertainment. All which shameful Excesses, together with the other Indignities he daily offer'd to the Queen, made the greatest part of the *Grandeess* abandon his Interests, to follow those of that Princess. And some thinking themselves oblig'd to carry things a greater length; amongst others the Marquis of *Nissa*, his own Uncle, and the Marquis of *Sandes*, going to the Favourite, represented to him, *That being perswaded the King could have no Children, there was an absolute Necessity of Marrying the Infant*. Of which they having by many Reasons convinc'd him, he so manag'd the King, that he obtain'd his Consent to't. And the Two Brothers having then but one Confessor, 'twas he that came from the King to tell the Infant the News. To which *Don Pedro* answering in writing, after many grateful Marks of Acknowledgment, he represented, *That before all things 'twould be convenient to assign him a Pension proportionable to his Birth, and the Design his Majesty had of Marrying him; after which a Princess being found, he thought it would be convenient to take the King and Queen of Britain's Advice before*

fore she was ask'd. Naming at the same time, to shorten the tediousness of these Proceedings, his Secretary, *John de Boxas*, to Treat of all that, with such Person or Persons as his Majesty should be pleas'd to appoint.

Tho' Count *Schomberg* was mostly upon the Frontiers, he was pretty well instructed of what pass'd at Court; he knew *Don Alfonso's* wild and untractable Humour, and was not ignorant of his unworthy Treatment of the Queen; and what yet most affected him, was to see that the Favourite, far from endeavouring to mitigate the rudeness and incivility of his Master's Manners, confirm'd the King in his Wildness; imagining, that as long as he was well with his Master, nothing could wrong him. And withal, this reflecting upon the blindness and stupidity of that Minister, who never thinking of making the necessary Preparations for the Campaign, let slip many good Occasions of extending the Limits of *Portugal*, and enlarging the Bounds of his Native Country; the Count envied extreamly the Happiness of those who were about to acquire a Reputation in the War which *France* was going to Declare against *Spain*. And mean time, that he might not have any thing to reproach himself withal, after having prepar'd what he thought Necessary for that Attempt, he departed from *Estremoz* the 7th or 8th of *March*, at the Head of 4000 Foot, and 600 Horse, with a Design to take *Albuquerque*, or at least to carry off a Regiment of *Castilian* Horse, and another of *Irish* Infantry, which were in the Lower-Town; besides which, there was in a little Castle in the Higher-Town Four Companies of *Catalonians*.

The Count marching all the Night, the Infantry met with no small difficulty in passing over Two little Rivers, where they were up to the Middle in Water. However, arriving at the Place an Hour before Day, and scaling the Walls, they march'd straight to break open the Gate of the Lower-Town; having brought Two Petards, and every other thing that was Necessary to facilitate the entry into the Higher, in Case they could not get in pell-mell with the Soldiers and Citizens, who they thought, upon their appearing, would retire thither: Designing to fix the Petard while the *English* should endeavour to Scale the Castle at a Place where 'twas said the Wall was very low; but these finding the Wall much higher than the Spies had imagin'd it was, and the *Portuguese* finding Pallisado's and other Works before the Gate, which render'd its Access very difficult, the uneasiness of the Streets likewise hindering the Petard to be brought up in time, the *Irish* having now lin'd the Walls within, and making a terrible Fire, (it being already Day) Count Schomberg sent the Marquis of *Beringhen*, his *Aid de Camp*, with Orders to his Regiment of Infantry, which was drawn up in Battalia, waiting the Effect of the Petard in a great Street, opposite to the Gate, to retire, they having already lost an Officer, and Five or Six Soldiers, by the Enemies Fire. Sending at the same time a *Portuguese* Officer to carry the same Order to the Marquis of *Noirmontier*, who was posted in another Street at the Head of a *Portuguese* Regiment he commanded; but he receiv'd together with that Order a Musket-shot, of which he immediately died. He was a Man of Singular Merit, and had giv'n great

great Hopes of carrying one Day very far the Glory of the House of *Tremouil*, of which he was descended.

So that the Enterprize upon the Higher-Town misgiving, the *Portugueze* having taken some Troopers and Citizens, who could not make their escape thither, with the rest, retired with a considerable Booty, and the loss of Five and Twenty or Thirty Men.

And in the latter end of *March*, the Abbot of *St. Romain*, who had remain'd at the Court of *Portugal*, ever since the King *Alfonso's* Marriage, in Quality of Envoy of *France*, concluded with him the following League Offensive and Defensive; as here see you it, word for word.

A Treaty of a League Offensive and Defensive, between the most Serene and Mighty Princes Louis XIV. and Alfonso VI. Kings of France and Portugal, against the King of Castile ; Concluded at Lisbon the Last of March, 1667.

AFTER that the most Christian King on one Side, has in vain made use of all Friendly and Peaceable Means to induce the King of *Castile* (according to the Justice of the Cause) to render the Towns and Provinces, belonging by Right of Succession to the most Christian Queen, his Spouse ; and the King of *Portugal* on the other Hand, after many Victories, and with the Mediation of the King of *Great Britain*, not having been hitherto able to obtain of the said King of *Castile* a Sure and Honourable Peace : And finally, as it appears by an infinity of Experiences, that nothing but Force of Arms can oblige the *Castilians* to consent that every Prince should enjoy his own Dominions ; We, Melchior of *Heron*, Baron of *St. Romain*, Knight of the Order of *St. Lazarus*, Abbot of *St. Leonard* of *Corbinace*, Commissioner, having Power, Deputy for the present Treaty for His most Christian Majesty on one Side ; and on the other Side, Don *Vasquez Lewis* of *Agarnes*, Marquis of *Nissa*, Count of *Lari-*
diquier,

' *diquier*, and Admiral of the *East-Indian* Seas ;
 ' and *Don Juan* of *Silva*, Marquis of *Gaura*,
 ' Count of *Portalegre*, &c. Great Master of the
 ' King's Household ; and *Don Anthony Lewis* of
 ' *Meneses*, Marquis of *Marialva*, Count of
 ' *Castanhada*, &c. and *Francisco de Torrez* Mar-
 ' quis of *Sanda*, Count of *Pont*, &c. *Lewis*
 ' of *Vasconcellos* of *Sousa Castel-Melhor*, &c.
 ' *Anthony* of *Sousa Magueda*, Sieur of *Lisle*,
 ' Great Secretary of State, all Deputies for His
 ' Majesty of *Portugal*, having Power to make
 ' the said Treaty ; after having maturely exa-
 ' mined the Powers and Deputations of the one
 ' and the other of the said Lords our Kings,
 ' and all the Points thereof, have made and
 ' contracted, by Order of the said Lords our
 ' Kings, (by vertue of the said Powers) the
 ' following League Offensive and Defensive,
 ' and all the Articles thereof ; hoping by that
 ' Means to force the *Castilians* to a Just, Sure,
 ' and Honourable, Peace.

I.

' The very Instant that the Peace which
 ' is now on Foot betwixt the Crown
 ' of *France*, it's Allies, and *England*, shall be
 ' Concluded, His most Christian Majesty shall
 ' Declare War against the King of *Castile*, and
 ' carry it on by Sea and Land.

II.

' If contrary to the Expectation and Desire
 ' of the Two Kings, the King of *England* should
 ' not now, nor in the Space of 30 Months,
 ' from

' from this Day, Conclude a Peace, the said 30
 ' Months being once expired, notwithstanding the
 ' War of *England*, His most Christian Majesty
 ' shall Declare War against *Castile*, and Reli-
 ' giously observe it; this present Treaty being
 ' for the Space of Ten Years from this Day.
 ' And if for some Important Reason His Majesty
 ' did not Declare War against *Castile* at the end
 ' of the said 30 Months, the present Treaty
 ' shall notwithstanding remain in force, as well
 ' as the Continuation of the Subvention of 900000
 ' Croisado's, in the manner specified in the fol-
 ' lowing Article, till the Day that His most Chri-
 ' stian Majesty Declares War against *Castile*.

III.

' From the Day that this present Treaty shall
 ' be Sign'd, till the Day that *France* shall De-
 ' clare War, whether within the Space of 30
 ' Months, or less, the Peace of *England* be Con-
 ' cluded, or not, the King of *Portugal* shall
 ' make War with all His Forces, and shall not
 ' conclude any Peace or Truce whatsoever, for
 ' a small or for a long time, with the King of
 ' *Castile*. And to the end the King of *Portugal*
 ' may be able more commodiously to sustain the
 ' Charges of the War, till His most Christian
 ' Majesty likewise Declares War against *Castile*,
 ' His said most Christian Majesty grants to His
 ' Majesty of *Portugal* the Sum of One Million
 ' and Eight Hundred Thousand Livres Yearly,
 ' Mony of *France*; which being reduc'd into
 ' Mony of *Portugal*, makes the Sum of Nine
 ' Hundred Thousand Croisado's; of which Sum
 ' Six Hundred Thousand Livres shall be im-
 ' ployed

‘ ployed for the Entertainment of the *French*
 ‘ Troops, by Order of the Noble Man *Peter*
 ‘ *Gravet*, or his Successors, as it has been hi-
 ‘ therto practised; and the Twelve Hundred
 ‘ Thousand Livers remaining which make Six
 ‘ Hundred Thousand Croisado's, shall be paid at
 ‘ *Lisbon* to the King of *Portugal* in Three Pay-
 ‘ ments of Four Hundred Thousand Livers each;
 ‘ the First within Two Months after the Ratifica-
 ‘ tion of this Treaty; the Second Four Months
 ‘ afterwards; and so every Year from Four to
 ‘ Four Months.

I V.

‘ From the Instant that the War shall be De-
 ‘ clared by the most Christian King against the
 ‘ King of *Castile*, His most Christian Majesty
 ‘ shall be freed from the payment of a Million
 ‘ and Eight Hundred Thousand Livers, of which
 ‘ shall be employ'd Six Hundred Thousand Li-
 ‘ vers (as is said) for the Entertainment of the
 ‘ *French* Troops, and the Surplus paid to His
 ‘ Majesty of *Portugal*, as is likewise said; de-
 ‘ claring, That if Their Majesties of *France* and
 ‘ *Portugal* Order the *French* Troops to retire,
 ‘ the whole Sum shall be intirely paid to the King
 ‘ of *Portugal*, for the Charges of the War.

V.

‘ And to the end the said Sum may be the ea-
 ‘ slier paid at *Lisbon*, the King of *Portugal* shall
 ‘ cause his Mark to be put upon Two Hundred and
 ‘ Sixty Thousand Paracoons, without any Charges,
 ‘ or Expences, as well for the Payment of the
 ‘ *French*

French Troops, as for the Pensions which His most Christian Majesty gives to the Commanders and Conductors of the War, who serve in *Portugal* by his Order; the Surplus of the Sum promised before, or since the Declaration of the War, being to be paid at *Lisbon* to the King of *Portugal*, one half in Current French Crowns commonly call'd in *Spain* Patacoons, at the rate of 600 Rees each; and the other in *Spanish* Pistols, or French *Lewis d'ors* at the rate of Two Thousand Rees each.

VI.

The present Treaty shall be observ'd during the Space of Ten Years, and during the First Thirty Months of the said time, or before, if possible, His most Christian Majesty shall declare War against the King of *Castile*, as is agreed in the Second Article; and mean time there shall be an Alliance and League Offensive and Defensive, against the King and Kingdom of *Castile*, and his Allies, except the Kings of *England* and *Swedeland*, till such time as a Good and General Peace (by which the Confederated Kings may be respectively satisfied) can be Concluded; to wit, the most Christian King as to the Towns and Provinces which by Right of Succession belong to the Queen his Spouse; and the King of *Portugal*, as to the Acknowledgment and Re establishment of his Royal Crown; declaring that the Peace shall be treated of directly, and by Writ, betwixt the Kings of *Portugal* and *Castile*; namely, as it is customary to be done betwixt equal Kings, faithfully, and without any Scruple or Surprisal; and that the King

King of *Portugal* shall be put in Possession of
all the Places of *Portugal* and *Algarva*; which
now are or may be Occupied by the *Castilian*
Arms; and in the same manner shall those be-
longing to the King of *France* in *Flanders* be
deliver'd up to him.

VII.

During the Space of the said Ten Years,
it shall not be lawful for any of the said Kings
to treat of any Peace or Truce, and much less
to conclude the one or the other, without the
common, exprefs and mutual consent of both
Kings, who shall so act in Conjunction and
Union with one another, that the Enemy may
be deprived of all hopes of making any different
and separate Accommodation; the said Kings
mutually promising and declaring that they
shall not be induced to separate nor divide them-
selves by any Artifice whatsoever; promising
likewise that they shall declare the same in Time
and Place to the Ministers of the King of *Ca-*
stile; and agreeing between themselves that
they shall not treat of, nor conclude any thing
without the mutual and reciprocal consent of
one another.

VIII.

And the better to oblige the common Enemy
to consent to the Peace; the most Christian
King shall every Year make War against him
with all his Forces, in all the Places he can do
it; namely in *Spain*, on the Side of *Catalonia*,
or *Biscay*; and the King of *Portugal* shall like-

' Wise as vigorously as it shall be possible to him,
 ' make War against the King of *Castile*, with all
 ' his Forces, and with a Royal Army of 12000
 ' Foot and 5000 Horse, shall make every Year
 ' Two Campaigns, the one before, and the other
 ' after the Heats; and if by reason of any insu-
 ' perable Difficulty, one of these Campaigns
 ' should not be made, instead of it there shall
 ' be made at least Four Incurfions into the
 ' Enemies Country, each with 4000 Men at
 ' least.

I X.

' The King of *Portugal* (as hitherto he has
 ' done) shall furnish to the *French* Troops, Hor-
 ' ses, Bread, Barley, and Straw, and pay them
 ' punctually the Grasse as usual; and the Body
 ' of *French* Troops shall be commanded, and
 ' govern'd, as hitherto they have been, by the
 ' most Excellent Count of *Schomberg*, or some
 ' other Experienced General, agreeable to the
 ' King of *Portugal*, which shall be sent by His
 ' most Christian Majesty, in case it be necessary
 ' to put any other in his Place, which General
 ' his Successor as well as the said Count, shall
 ' obey the Governor of the Arms of the Pro-
 ' vince where the War is made, the Camp-Ma-
 ' sters General, and in the same manner the Ge-
 ' nerals of the Horse, and Artillery, and Go-
 ' vernors of Places where there are Garrisons.

' And to the end the War may be the more
 ' commodiously carry'd on, that the *French* and
 ' *Portuguese* Officers of equal Posts shall Com-
 ' mand one another, according to the Date of
 ' their Commissions, and that the *French* Camp-
 ' Ma-

‘ Masters-General of Horse, shall be esteem’d
 ‘ equal to the *Portugueze* Lieutenant-Generals of
 ‘ Horse; His most Christian Majesty reserving
 ‘ to Himself the filling up of the Posts which
 ‘ may become Vacant in the *French* Troops.

X.

‘ The King of *Portugal* shall confirm the Pri-
 ‘ vileges and Immunities granted by His Predeces-
 ‘ sors to the *French* Nation, and in like manner
 ‘ the most Christian King to the *Portugueze*.
 ‘ The Subjects of the most Christian King, and
 ‘ particularly the *French* Merchants in the *Por-
 tugueze* Dominions on this and the other side
 ‘ of the Line, shall enjoy all the Commodities,
 ‘ Liberties, Privileges, Rights, Exemptions, and
 ‘ Prerogatives, which by the last Treaties have
 ‘ been granted to the *English* and *Dutch* Na-
 ‘ tions, which we hold to be as expressly de-
 ‘ clared in this Treaty, as if they were inserted
 ‘ in it; and in the same manner, the *Portugueze*
 ‘ shall enjoy in the Places subject to the Crown
 ‘ of *France*, the same Privileges, Commodities,
 ‘ and Prerogatives, which by this present Treaty
 ‘ are granted to the *French*.

XI.

‘ The Consuls of the *French* Nation shall en-
 ‘ joy in all the Places subject to the Crown of
 ‘ *Portugal*, and particularly at *Lisbon*, the same
 ‘ Privileges, Rights, and Honours, which those
 ‘ of the *English* and *Dutch* do now enjoy; and
 ‘ in like manner, the Consuls of the *Portugueze*
 ‘ shall enjoy in all Places subject to the Crown

‘ of *France*, the same Privileges that are hereby
 ‘ granted to the *French*.

XII.

‘ His *Portuguese* Majesty shall order to receive
 ‘ in all his Ports and Coasts, all *French* Ships ;
 ‘ and especially those belonging to the *East* and
 ‘ *West-India* Companies ; and shall favour as much
 ‘ as he can the Trade of the said Companies ;
 ‘ and in like manner shall the *Portuguese* Ships
 ‘ be received in all Places subject to the Crown
 ‘ of *France*. But to avoid all Tumults that may
 ‘ happen, it is agreed not to receive any greater
 ‘ number of Ships of War than is admitted of
 ‘ the *English*, according to the Treaty made with
 ‘ them.

XIII.

‘ Into this Treaty shall be admitted all Kings
 ‘ and Princes who shall be desirous to enter in-
 ‘ to it, and especially His Majesty of *Great Bri-*
 ‘ *tain* ; the King of *Portugal* being not only de-
 ‘ sirous to Entertain the Brotherly Concord and
 ‘ Amity he had with His *Britannick* Majesty ;
 ‘ but to augment it if possible.

XIV.

‘ Immediately after the Conclusion of the
 ‘ Peace with *England*, His most Christian Ma-
 ‘ jesty shall endeavour by all sorts of good Of-
 ‘ fices to accommodate the Differences which
 ‘ are betwixt *Portugal* and the States-General
 ‘ of *Holland*, to the end that the Towns of *Cochin*
 ‘ and

‘ and *Cananor* may be restored ; for which shall
 ‘ be made a particular Article in the Treaty of
 ‘ Peace between *England* and *Holland*. And in
 ‘ like manner His most Christian Majesty shall
 ‘ intercede with the Pope that he may Confirm
 ‘ the Bishops of *Portugal* as other Popes have
 ‘ done before him.

XV.

‘ The King of *Portugal* shall be allow’d to
 ‘ raise Troops of Horse, or Foot, in *France*, and
 ‘ *Alsace*, if ’tis necessary, (at his own Expences)
 ‘ to conduct Engineers and Mariners, to buy
 ‘ Horses and all sorts of Arms for his own De-
 ‘ fence, and Offence of his Enemies ; as well as
 ‘ Ammunitions and Provisions at the same Price
 ‘ that His most Christian Majesty might buy
 ‘ them ; providing that the Commissaries em-
 ‘ ployed by His *Portuguese* Majesty, give an
 ‘ exact account of the number of the Soldiers,
 ‘ Mariners and other things to be Exported out
 ‘ of *France* into *Portugal*, to the Illustrious Lord
 ‘ *Rochel* ; and to other Ministers and Publick Of-
 ‘ ficers, in other Towns and Places in *France*.

XVI.

‘ All the foresaid Conditions agreed and con-
 ‘ cluded betwixt the Kings of *France* and *Por-
 ‘ tugal*, shall be Confirm’d by a Ratification of
 ‘ this Treaty at *Paris* within 15 Days after the
 ‘ arrival of the Person that shall carry it thi-
 ‘ ther, at the Court of the most Christian King ;
 ‘ and the present Treaty shall not be in any ways
 ‘ manifested, till His most Christian Majesty De-

‘ declares War against *Castile*, and in Faith and
 ‘ Testimony of this present Treaty, We have
 ‘ sign’d it with our Hands and Signs at *Lisbon*,
 ‘ the last of *March*, 1667.

Sign’d, *Melchior de Heron*, Deputy of the
 most Christian King; the Marquis of *Nissa*,
 Admiral of the *Indies*; the Marquis of *Gaura*,
 Great Master of the Household; the Marquis
 of *Marialva*, the Marquis of *Sandes*, the
 Count of *Castel-Melhor*, *Anthony de Souza* of
Mageda.

That Prince immediately dispatch’d an Express
 to *France*, to Ratifie this Treaty, knowing that
 his most Christian Majesty was to enter into
Flanders in the Month of *May*, there to take
 what he thought fit in Compensation of the
 Queen’s Pretensions. This Juncture would have
 prov’d very favourable to the *Portugucze*, if their
 intestine Broils at their Court, and the little In-
 clination they naturally have to enlarge them-
 selves, had not made them neglect such favoura-
 ble Opportunities, inspiring into them only
 thoughts of a Peace. But tho’ on the other
 hand, the Court of *Castile* was extreamly divi-
 ded at Home, and press’d with mighty Enemies
 Abroad, and feeble everywhere; the *Castilians*
 notwithstanding supported every thing with much
 Resolution, choosing rather to let their Pupil be
 spoil’d, than to make a step that might cast the
 least blemish upon their Gravity. And the King
 of *England* (who has always been a very peace-
 able Monarch) easily seeing the extremity to
 which the *Castilians* were like to be reduc’d, sent
 my Lord *Sandwich* to Negotiate some Accommo-
 dation

dation amongst them ; while he himself on the other hand, was treating of a Peace with the *Dutch* : Which he soon after concluded.

All these Dispositions which seem'd so favourable to the *Portugueze*, inducing the Count of *Schomberg* to make Preparations for insulting the Country about *Gerhumena*, (designing afterwards to Besiege the Place if he found it convenient) he writ to the Court about it ; (but that Design being there disapprov'd) except some little Incursions meerly for Plunder, the Frontiers were now intirely as quiet as in time of Peace.

But if Tranquility reign'd upon the Frontiers, it was not so at Court, where the different Parties were fortifying and imbittering themselves against one another. The Queen now no more able to live under the hard constraint, to which the Brutality of the King and the Inhumanity of the Favourite had reduc'd her, discover'd to the Father *de Ville*, the great desire she had to make Count *Schomberg* the Confident of all her Misfortunes ; and of the just apprehension she had of something worse ; telling him, that the Duke of *Beaufort* and Bishop of *Loan* had recommended nothing so much to her, as to repose an intire Trust in him ; so that she was perswaded that he alone was able to alleviate her Sorrows, and furnish her Means to extricate her self gloriously out of the Abyss into which she was unfortunately plung'd ; upon which this Jesuit, (who has always been very faithful to his Mistress, and has made appear in all his Conduct a vast deal of Wit and Prudence) approving of the Queen's Design, communicated all to the Count of *Schomberg* ; and as they had already a mutual Esteem for one another, he gave him

him a large Account of the Misfortunes of that Princess, according to his own Inclination, and the Order he had receiv'd from her; confirming to him amongst other things, that the Story of the King's impotency was too true; and that it was to be fear'd that the Consequences might be very dangerous: There having been lately made a secret Door in the Queen's Chamber, by which any Person might enter into her Bed, without being perceiv'd by those that might be in the Room; and that it was to be apprehended that some Person might by that means be introduc'd to cover the Shame and Impotency of the King.

Tho' that Discourse with all its Circumstances could not but be sensible to a generous and well born Heart, who knew there was nothing less exaggerated nor more sincere. Count *Schomberg* foreseeing the dangerous Consequences of that Confidence, which might in some manner ingage him in some thing that might be prejudicial to him whom he was oblig'd to serve; represented to the Father *de Ville*, that considering the engagement in which he was with the King, he could not give himself intirely to the Queen; and therefore begg'd her Majesty to excuse him, if he only did his endeavour to Comfort her, and give her all the Advices he could for extricating her self out of all her Troubles.

That Moderation of the Count perswading the Queen, that her Confessor had not sufficiently represented to him her Circumstances, she was the more desirous to entertain him her self; but the Occasions of speaking to him without Interruption, or being overheard, were so seldom, that all she could say to him was, that his frequent
Con-

Conferences with the Father *de Ville*, being subject to become suspected, that Matter should be negotiated by Letters, for which they should make use of the Interposition of a Gentleman, who had been brought up a Page in her Family; but after having sometime employed that Gentleman in that Service, Count *Schomberg* understanding that the Queen kept all his Letters in a little Box, of which she intrusted her first Chamber-Maid with the Key; acquainted that Princess that the Depositary of her Secrets was beloved of, and did Love the Gentleman that did her Messages; and that her Woman likewise being brib'd by the Count of *Castel-Melhor*, it behov'd her Majesty to alter her Measures, and either to burn his Letters, or put the Box in some other Person's Custody, and keep the Key herself; as also to imploy another than that Gentleman, for carrying of her Messages in time to come.

During this commerce of Letters, the Father *de Ville* getting a little into the Acquaintance of the Infant's Confessor, who was of his Order; after having several times entertain'd him in general Terms of the Misfortunes of the Queen, and of the Injuries daily done to *Don Pedro*; he one Day designedly let fall some Words which gave ground to Conjecture, that it might not perhaps be impossible to find Remedies for so great Evils; and these Two Politick Jesuits finding in some following interviews, a great deal of Conformity betwixt the Sufferings of the Queen, and those of the Infant; they thought it could not be disadvantageous to either Party to act conjointly, thereby hoping to obviate the Mischiefs with which they were threatn'd: So that agreeing to give

give an Account of what they had concerted, the one to the Queen, and the other to the Infant; they separated, after having promis'd each other Secrecy.

In the Expectation of the Union of these Two Parties, the Infant's Confessor added to the Recital of what had pass'd betwixt the Father *de Ville* and him, that if the Queen's Secretary was intrusted with the Matter, it was impossible it could remain any longer Secret, because he could hide nothing from the Envoy of *France*; which Precaution appearing seasonable to the Queen and the Infant, it being communicated to the Count of *Schomberg*, he likewise found it very Judicious; adding that tho' he esteem'd the Abbot of *St. Romain*, he was so much the less to be trust-ed with that Affair, that his Character oblig'd him to give Notice of every thing in *France*; and that to wait for Counsels from thence, would be ruin to all, since upon every Occurrence new Measures were immediately to be taken; representing further, that the *French* were so little acquainted with the Characters of the Persons, and ways of managing of the *Portuguese*, that their Advices could no ways be Just and Seasonable as they ought to be. All which was much approved both by the Queen and the Infant, who notwithstanding found more difficulty than they imagin'd, in engaging Count *Schomberg* to be theirs without reserve; for he could not be easily induc'd to prefer *Don Pedro* to his Brother, who was already acknowledg'd King; representing that being engag'd to him by a Treaty, he could not break his Word without staining his Honour. To which both the Confessors answering him, that the Treaty (which
so

so much troubled him) having been made by the late Queen, and never renewed by *Don Alfonso*, did properly ingage him only to the Defense of the Kingdom, and that the only way to Execute that Treaty would be to protect the Infant, and put the management of Affairs into his Hands, since his Brother was incapable of it; their Design not being to deprive the King of his Crown, but of his evil Counsellors, thereby to put in Execution what the Queen Mother had in vain attempted for the Publick Good and Welfare; Count *Schomberg* at last consented to yield to so good Reasons, provided they would allow him to intrust a Person in *France* with the Intrigue, who might give Testimony of the Verity in time and place convenient; representing that the Confident he should chuse, was so much the less to be suspected, that he was very ill satisfied of the Count of *Castel-Melhor*; and being in Favour with the Viscount of *Turenne*, might be able to render them good Services: Which was easily granted to the Count as soon as he had nam'd *Fremont d' Ablancourt*. And the Infant, who till then had been but very little Conversant with the Count of *Schomberg*, being now very desirous of entertaining him, they agreed that the pretence of their frequent Meetings should be the Conversion of the Count; so that when any unexpected Person interrupted them, the Confessor would be saying to the Count, *Believe that the Matter in Question is of the greatest Importance, since upon that depends the Salvation of our Soul, &c.* or something else to that Purpose.

The Infant afterwards communicated the Secret to *Don Rodrigo of Meneses*, Gentleman of his

his Chamber, and President of the Palace, who had already had his Confidence a considerable time, and very well deserv'd it. He was Brother to Marquis of *Marialva*, who was then in the Confidence and Interests of the Count of *Castel-Melhor*. And the Count of *St. John* coming likewise over to the Infant's Interests about this time, Count *Schomberg* always afterwards conferred only with him, under pretence of walking abroad, or mounting Horses together without the Town. The said Count of *St. John* being very well worthy of a Place amongst the foremost of those noble Patriots, who were to bring about the weighty Enterprize they had undertaken. While these Conferences were thus continuing between the Grandees and the Party, every Body was thinking of the most convenient Means for convincing the World of the King's Impotency, the better to Authorize the Infant, and render him the more agreeable to the People, to the end the Project of the Queen Mother might be at last effected, by putting the Government of the Kingdom into *Don Pedro's* Hands. Meanwhile (tho' those of the Party did not hide any thing from one another) the Queen not being satisfied with that she could learn upon accidental Occasions, would needs oblige Count *Schomberg* to give her from time to time, a distinct Account of what he knew in Writing; so that receiving one Morning in her Bed a Letter from him, written upon all sides, on large Paper, as she was beginning to read it, her Lady of Honour coming in to the Room, reproaching her in a Magisterial tone, with her Laziness, pressing her to get up to go to Mass; and the King who follow'd her likewise, upbraiding the
the

the Queen after his ordinary brutish manner, she slipping the Letter under the Bolster, got up and ran to Church, to deliver her self from their Humours; but scarce was she arriv'd there, when remembring that she had left the Letter, and reflecting at the same time, that they might be a making her Bed, while she was abroad, she became extreamly uneasie, (and communicating her Grief to her Father *de Ville*, notwithstanding he represented that it was not becoming a Man of his Habit to put his Hand in the Queen's Bed) she order'd him to go immediately thither. But he hearing at the Door, that the King and the Lady Marquess of *Castel-Melhor* were still a grumbling, return'd without entering, and assur'd the Queen that her Bed was not a making; at which she being more disquieted than before, sent thither one of her Chamber-maids, who returning and telling the Queen, that she durst not approach her Bed, because the King was sitting upon it, her Majesty now no more able to remain in the Church, rising up under pretence of an Indisposition; she left the Mass half said, and returning to her Chamber, immediately threw her self upon her Bed; where putting her Hand under the Bolster, she found her Letter, but never spoke of it to her Friends, till all things were preform'd.

Mean time other Persons being receiv'd into the Secret, and their Number augmenting to Thirteen, Count *Schomberg* became very uneasie, under the apprehension that the thing might be discover'd before its Execution, and to alleviate his Vexation, continu'd to communicate the general Points of the Matter to the Viscount of *Turenne* by the interposition of *Fremont*.

It

It happening at this time that one of the Queen's Domesticks, for whom she had no small consideration, being kill'd by a Mule-driver, in returning from *Alentejo*; and the Murtherer escaping into the Church of *Conimbra*, he was taken out thence, and conducted to the Prisons of *Lisbon*; and tho' the Queen requir'd immediate Justice, and suffer'd very impatiently, that before all things it should be disputed, whither he had been lawfully taken; that incident together with the insufficiency of the Proofs which appear'd against him, made the Matter linger very long, notwithstanding all the Instances the Queen could make to have it dispatched. And there happening while this Process was depending, a difference between the Count of *St. Croix*, Great Master of the Queen's Household, and *Pedro* of *Almayda* her Secretary, which the Queen would have had examined by Two Counsellors of the Parliament, the Secretary of State having first laid the Matter before the Parliament, remov'd it afterwards of his own accord to the Counsel of State.

One Day that that Secretary presented a Letter coming from the Kingdom of *Angola* to the Queen, her Majesty asking him what News of those Two Matters? He told her, That as to that of the Prisoner, after some Formalities which yet remain'd to be made, it would be determin'd; and as for the other, it being before the Council of State, she might speak to the Count of *Castel-Melhor*; upon which the Queen irritated at such a sawcy Answer from the Secretary, took that Occasion to inveigh against the Favourite, alledging that he never had kept a Word of what he had promis'd her, and that he had reduc'd

duc'd her to Poverty, while he and his Creatures were swimming in Riches; and that there was no Account given her of the Affairs of State, and that even the most ordinary things were hid from her; that none of her Demands were answer'd, and that they not only fail'd in the Respect that was due to her, but endeavour'd on all occasions to Offend her, treating her much more like a Slave, than like a Queen. In Answer to which, *Souza* of *Macedo*, having first excus'd himself for carrying that Business to the Counsel of State, and replied to all the other Heads of the Queens Complaint; when he came to the last, leaving off the *French*, and speaking *Portugueze*, he very passionately continu'd his Discourse; upon which the Queen commanding him not to speak so high; he answered huffingly that he only spoke to make himself be heard; and tho' her Majesty order'd him to be silent, he still spoke on; upon which the Queen rising up to be gone, and he holding her by the Gown, turning about to the Ladies of the Palace and her own Chamber-maids, she complain'd bitterly of that Violence; crying out that never a Queen was so unworthily treated. And the Secretary *Souza* of *Macedo* going streight to give the King an account of what had happen'd, *Don Alfonso* coming at the same time to see the Queen, and promising to revenge her of the Secretary, every Party drew their Consequences from that Business. The Town of *Lisbon*, according to Custom, gave at this time the Divertisement of a Bull-bating, in Honour of St. *Anthony* of *Padua* their Patron; and the First being already run when that Contest happen'd, as they were brought to run the Second, word was brought that the Queen, would

not be there, giving out to dissemble her absence to the People, that the King was indispos'd, making use of that Excuse for Three or Four Days, till the Queen persisting to Demand with much Resolution the removal of the Secretary, that Affair being at last debated in Council, it was there resolv'd, that he should absent himself some Days, so that the Court was pacified for a little time.

But the Count of *Castel-Melhor* who was not yet well recover'd since the Affair of the Secretary, being advis'd by the means of the Confessors, that there was a Conspiracy form'd against him, which was to be put in Execution at *Madre de Deos*, whither he us'd to go on *Saturdays*, falling into great Mistrusts upon this Advice, and entering into some Suspicions of the Count of *St. John*, and even of Count *Schomberg*, under pretence that the *Castilians* were undertaking something against the Frontiers, he sent them Orders from the King not to leave their Governments; sending some time afterwards a Second Order to the latter, to assemble the Troops of his Province, and be in a readiness to March upon first advertisement.

And at last, the Count of *Castel-Melhor* discover'd fully his Mistrust and Fear; the 2d of *September* he caused the Palace Guards to be doubled, and Four Companies of Horse to be drawn up in Battalia, in the Palace-Yard, together with the Regiment of the *Armada*, which serves instead of Guards, placing the King's Bravo's in the Garden; he likewise arm'd the Officers that approach'd his Majesty's Person, with Orders to kill the Count of *Villafior*, and *Louis Mendosa* under pretence they had a Design upon the Count of *Castel-Melhor's* Life.

Those

Those who thought they saw farthest into that Intrigue, alledging, that the Design was only to suppress the Infant and his Party, they resolving to take their Precautions; and hearing that all the Avenues of the Palace were guarded by armed Men, who kept the Gates shut, and perhaps might have dangerous Orders, the Infant wrote a Letter to the King, in which he demanded the removal of his Favourite; but *Don Alfonso* receiving it with one Hand, and giving it with the other, without looking upon it to the Count of *Castel-Melhor*; he, as soon as he had read it, order'd the Palace to be fortified more than before, and when he had done, he entertain'd for a while some thoughts of retiring; but a Minute afterwards he changed his Resolution.

Next Day the King sent the Marquis of *Marialva*, to tell his Brother, that very sufficient Reasons had oblig'd him to double the Guard of his Palace; to which the Marquis added (as of himself) that if the Infant pleas'd, the Count of *Castel-Melhor* would come and throw himself at his Feet. But *Don Pedro* still persisting to demand Justice of the Favourite, the Count of *Castel-Melhor* propos'd to *Don Alfonso*, to go at the Head of his Counsel and Great Men of the Court, and Arrest the Infant and his Principal Officers in his Palace. But he not thinking that convenient, contented himself to write to *Don Pedro*, who answer'd very boldly his Letter.

Mean time all *Lisbon* being in Arms, and the People in a mighty Consternation, not knowing what would be the Event of all those Confusions, the Infant thought fit to acquaint all the Tribunals of the Town with the Reasons of his Complaints,

and Communicating to them the Copies of the Letters he had written to the King, and the Answers he had Receiv'd. And finding they did all take his part, he invited the Counsellors of State, and the Grandees and Nobility of the Kingdom, to go along with him to demand all together of the King the Removal of the Count of *Castel-Melhor*. And the King on the other Hand. intimidating the Tribunals of *Lisbon*, and even the Judge of the People, wrote into all the Provinces, commanding the Count of *St. John* to let no Body go out of his Government without his Order ; and ordering Count *Schomberg* to be always in a readiness to march with his Army ; causing likewise at the same time the Fleet to be recall'd to *Lisbon*. So that there now being great Appearances of a Civil War, while all things were in this Confusion, the Infant sent to acquaint the King, that to prevent the Inconveniences of those Intestine Broils which so much alarmed every Body, he was resolv'd to retire into the Province of *Tra los Montes*. But *Don Alfonso* endeavouring by an Artificial Letter to break his Design, the Infant nevertheless persisted in his Resolution of retiring from *Lisbon*, till every Body interposing to detain him, at last the Queen herself offered her Mediation ; which the Infant having accepted, after several Letters had past betwixt them, he at last sent her one, of Assurance for the Count of *Castel-Melhor*. And tho' 'twas very late when that came to the Palace, there now remaining no excuse for the Favourite, after having in vain endeavour'd to perswade the King to go to *Alentejo* ; he retired to the Convent of *Ara-bida*, attended by a sufficient Guard of Cavalry.

The Infant and his Friends had flatter'd themselves, that after the Departure of his Favourite, the King would become more Tractable; but *Don Pedro* going to the Palace found that it was quite otherwise; for besides that the King receiv'd him very ill, 'tis to be imagin'd that *Don Alfonso* made use of some very extraordinary Expressions, after the Infant was gone out; since the Queen found herself oblig'd to advise him not to go thither any more. In effect the Guards remain'd still in the Court as before, and some Companies advanc'd pretty near to the Infant's Palace.

Henry Anrique either being then Sick, or feigning to be so, the King went always to see him in the Night; till the Sick Man being inform'd that there was a Design a foot against his Life, he thought fit to make off; so that of that Cabal there now remained about *Don Alfonso* only *Anthony Sousa* of *Maceda*, who was hid in the Palace; and *Manuel Antunez*, Keeper of the Privy Purse.

Those Favourites having sent in the Queen's Name to desire the Infant to come to the Palace, and he excusing himself by Letters, the King having written to him, he went thither, but was but indifferently received; and what troubl'd him most, was to see that the Secretary of State was recall'd by an Act of Counsel, very injurious to the Queen; who not being able to endure such an Affront, having written very largely to the King about it, he put her Letter in his Pocket without reading it, and notwithstanding her Intreaties, insisting that that Act should take Place, the Secretary appeared armed in the Palace.

The Infant was so sensibly griev'd at the Injustice done to the Queen, that going to the Palace

the 5th of *October*, follow'd by the Nobility and a great Concourse of People ; as he was talking hotly with the King in His Chamber, His Majesty falling into a Passion, demanded His Sword, at which the Queen coming in, (being surpriz'd at that Noise) *Don Alfonso* imagining, that his Secretary was Kill'd, could not be pleas'd till he saw him.

All the Town being thus in a great Commotion, the King, the Queen, the Infant and the Secretary of State appeared upon a Balcony ; and the People satisfied to see these Four Persons together, cryed out several times, *God save the King*. After which *Don Alfonso* passing through a multitude of People which fill'd the Palace, and saying, *That he pardon'd every Body*, the Count of *Sabugal* taking the Liberty to tell him, *That it was not Pardon but Thanks that were expected of him—I grant* (said he) *the one and the other* ; and then playing upon a Flageolet, and afterwards desiring a very grave Person who was there to do the like ; such Childishness appeared so very displeasing to the People, that some of them would have had him arrested that moment.

The Infant still insisting that the Secretary should be removed, resolv'd to lye that Night in the Palace ; but *Sousa* of *Maceda* knowing it, desired the Count of *St. Jago* and the Admiral to assure *Don Pedro* that he should be gone that Evening ; and *Manuel Antuner* likewise sending to desire his Permission to be gone, the Infant (who had obtain'd what he desired) retir'd through an infinite multitude of People to his own Palace.

The King seeking every where in vain his Secretary and his Treasurer, and accusing the Infant of
having

having chas'd them away, *Don Pedro* abstain'd from going to the Palace, resolving in his Counsel to summon the States to meet, and obliging the City of *Lisbon* to present an Address to the King for that Effect. But after many Refusals and Delays an Assembly being held consisting of the Counsel of State, of the Deputies of *Lisbon* and of most of the other Towns of the Kingdom; they determin'd in the presence of the King, Queen and Infant, that the States should be assembled. But the King still opposing it, the Marquess of *Sardes* told him, That if he would not consent to the meeting of that Assembly, he must govern conjointly with the Queen and Infant as he had done with his Favourites; which *Don Alphonso* yet refusing to do, and not knowing what he would be at, the Infant now resolving to keep no more measures with him, went the Day after All-Saints Day to speak to the Officers of the Troops which were in Battalia in the Court of the Palace (who stood to their Arms when he pass'd by) telling them, That tho' he could not conceive to what Service they were destin'd, he was perswaded that it could not be against him, since he had not entertain'd any Design against the Repose and Welfare of the King, and Kingdom; but that on the contrary acknowledging him for his Brother, he assur'd himself that they would be ready to serve him and the State upon all Occasions. And some Persons posted there on purpose, joyning the Officers of those Troops which were already gain'd, they all confirming the Infant in the Sentiments he seem'd to entertain of them, *Don Pedro* after having thanked them, going up into the Palace, first made himself Master of the King, without his

Knowledge; and then going to wait upon the Queen, he advis'd her to retire to the Convent of Hope, from whence she immediately wrote to the King, *That the small Account that was made of her at Court having oblig'd her to retire to that Convent, she now thought fit (not being his Wife) to demand of him her Patrimony, and Permission to return to France;* Sending at the same time to desire the Abbot of St. Romain to come and hear at her grate the Reasons which had induc'd her to throw her self into that Monastery. During which Messages that Princess dismiss'd her *Portuguese* Maids of Honour, &c. telling them, That she was none of their Queen, and retaining only Three to attend her, while she receiv'd the Complements of such as came to wait upon her.

The King transported with Anger at the hearing of the Queen's Letter, getting immediately into Coach, surrounded by those who were got ready to accompany his Majesty a Hunting; and driving straight to the Convent, the Door being refus'd him, and he calling aloud for Hammers and Axes to break it open, the Queen (at that Word and at the Noise of so great a Concourse of People of whose Design she was ignorant) fell into a Swoon; the Infant at the same time coming up, and the Counsellors of State which were present joining with him, they hinder'd *Don Alfonso* from proceeding any further in his Attempt.

Next Day the Queen having sent for the Infant, desired him to carry her Complaints to the King, *Don Pedro* gave his Majesty an account of his Message. But *Don Alfonso* still insisting that he was not impotent, the Queen causing the principal Officers of the Kingdom to be assembled, she likewise made known to them her Design

sign of returning to *France*, so soon as she should get her Marriage declared Null : The Management of which Affair she had committed to the Duke of *Cadaval*. And having likewise written to the Chapter of the Cathedral on that Subject, and they sending her such an answer as she desired, she soon after dispatched *Verjus* to *France* to give her Family an account of her Proceedings.

The King's Impotency being thus divulg'd, the People all with one Voice cryed out, That the Queen should be married to the Infant. But the Magistrates of the Town at the Counsel of Four and Twenty went a greater length; for they press'd *Don Pedro* immediately to accept the Regency of the Kingdom. And in the middle of all this Confusion, the Marquess of *Cascais* awaking the King next Morning, told him with his ordinary Liberty, *That if he did not speedily resolve to send for the Infant, and remit the Government into his hands, his Crown was irretrievably lost.* But that infatuated Prince (tho' the Counsel of State told him the same thing) rejecting all the seasonable Advices that were giv'n him, could not at all be brought to apply, or determine himself to any thing.

The Duke of *Cadaval* mean time continuing to press the Infant to come to the Palace, he went thither the 23d of *November* after Dinner, accompanied with the Magistrates and Counsel of the City, and Counsel of Four and Twenty; who joyning themselves to the Counsel of State which was waiting for them, after a short Conference in the Anti-chamber, the King not at all appearing surprized, was arrested in his own Chamber. Which being executed, the Infant immediately
nam'd

nam'd for Secretary of State *Pedro Vieira de Silva*, who had serv'd in that Office under the late King; and during the Regency of the Queen. And he drawing up a Writ, containing the Reasons and Motives of that sudden Change, they were Read and Approv'd in the following Counsel. And tho' *Anthony Cavida* presented to the same Counsel a Paper Sign'd by the King, containing that Prince's Abdication, the Infant nevertheless would not hear of accepting the Crown. And knowing that the King extreamly ill treated those that serv'd him, resolv'd to lye in the Palace, and likewise detain there some of the principal of the Counsel of State, of the Nobility, and of the People; confirming at the same time the Convocation of the States for the Month of *January* following, and causing likewise for the satisfaction of his Creatures the King's Abdication to be Examined; so that tho' he refused the Crown, he enjoy'd all its Advantages.

Count *Schomberg*, tho' far from the Court during these great Revolutions, being acquainted with every thing that pass'd there, acted very well his Part, having dispersed into the uttermost Borders of *Alentejo* the Troops of that Province, which the Favourite thought to have made use of to oppress the Infant; till being assured by *Don John of Silva*, whom *Don Pedro* had sent Express to acquaint him, That he was about to arrest the King, and take the Government into his hands, immediately assembling the Army, for a pretence to keep it together, he Besieged *Forcira*, the Garrison of which extreamly incommoded the Neighbourhood; being a Castle situated upoh the *Tagus* in the Heart of the Country. Which having taken and made all that were in it

it Prisoners of War, he ordered his Cavalry to advance towards *Brosses*, waiting for them himself with some Infantry, at a certain Pass, to facilitate their Return; and that Party having burn'd some Villages who had made Resistance and brought off a great many Prisoners, he afterwards retired to *Elvas*.

The *Castilians* mean time were little less imbroiled than the *Portuguese*; for *Don Juan* of *Austria* having been commanded to *Flanders* with a great deal of Men, Money and Ships, to stop the Progress of the Arms of *France*; instead of going thither in Person, contented himself to send off his Ships one by one, with the Soldiers (who had mostly been levied by force) in which he succeeded better than if he had sent them altogether; for in that Case the *French Fleet* which was then Cruizing on those Coasts might easily have attack'd and destroy'd them. But *Don Juan* and his Creatures suffering with much Reluctancy and Aversion the Elevation and Administration of *Father Nitard*, he resolv'd to return to *Madrid*, expecting no small share in the Regency.

Tho' the Count of *Castel-Melhor* was absent from the Court, as long as the Power remain'd in the Hands of *Don Alfonso*, the Favourite govern'd as much as ever, by the interposition of *Henry Anrique*, *Sousa* of *Maceda* and others of his faithful Creatures, who remained about the King. But as soon as the Count heard, that *Don Alfonso* was deprived of all his ancient Officers, and arrested himself, he immediately made his escape on Foot, and flying away in Disguise, made use of such Conveniencies as he could find in the Way, Marching in the Night, and hiding himself in the Day, till getting at last to the Extremities
of

of the Kingdom, after a great many difficulties he retired into other Countries, where he suffer'd very much. And the Court having since ordered him to remain in *Savoy*, that they might be better inform'd of his Conduct, he thence made several turns to *France*; hoping by *Lewis* the Fourteenth's interposition, to obtain Permission to return to *Portugal*; but all that could be granted to him, at the desire of the King of great *Britain*, was that *Don Pedro* should consent that the Count should remain in *England*, under the Protection of her Brittannick Majesty; from whence 'tis believed that he frequently took turns to *Portugal*, which conjecture is confirm'd by his Lady's having been several times with Child since his leaving that Country.

The rest of *Don Alfonso's* Creatures were all Banish'd and Dispers'd, except some few who made their Peace. *Henry Anrique* was imprison'd, and *Anthony Sousa* of *Maceda*, (after having been long absent,) obtained at last Permission, to return to his own House, where he imploy'd his time in Study.

While *Don Alfonso* was thus kep't close in his Palace, and the Queen in the Convent of Hope, using her utmost efforts to get her Marriage declared Null, the Count of *Castel-Melhor* being in flight, his Family in Trouble, his Friends in Consternation, and his Creatures Dispers'd, or in Prison, *Don Pedro* with his Confidants were endeavouring by favourable treatment to draw into their Party, all such as were willing to enter into't, and especially the Deputies of the States; who render'd themselves at *Lisbon* within the time prescrib'd them.

Amidst all these Intrigues and Cabals at Court, there was that of the Marquis of *Lich*, who being
stil

still a Prisoner at *Lisbon*, and knowing the great Progress the French had made the Campaign before in *Flanders*, and the Consternation in which they were at *Madrid*, in the apprehensions that another Campaign should deprive them of the rest of the Low Countries, together with French County; being most of all allarm'd to see that *Don Juan* would not go into *Flanders*, tho' the Queen Regent and the Counsel of State had ordered him thither, and furnish'd him Money, Troops and Ships which had been promis'd him; the Marquis not being able to comprehend the reasons why that Prince in such a pressing conjuncture should make it his capital Business to supplant Father *Nitard*, which he easily foresaw, would put the Court of *Spain* extremely in disorder, endeavouring to deliver his Country from a part of its Evils, and render himself considerable to both parties; he us'd all his efforts to get a Peace concluded with *Portugal*: For which he so advantageously dispos'd some of the Deputies of the States, that the thing was ready to be propos'd at the First meeting of that Assembly.

After the usual formalities at the opening of the States, the first thing they did was to declare the Infant, Prince. or Presumptive Heir of the Crown. And *Don Pedro* on his side causing an Authentick Copy of the King's Abdication to be deliver'd to each of the three States, to have their advice separately; the Deputies of the People or Commons were unanimously resolved to declare the Prince King. But seeing that the other two Bodies of that Assembly were not speedily like to come to any resolution, because there was no time to be lost in that deliberation, it was determin'd that the Prince should only take upon him the quality of Regent.

At

At this time, the Abbot of *St. Romain*, Envoy of *France*, acquainted the States that a Peace was already on Foot between *France* and *Spain*, and that if they were resolv'd to send their Plenipotentiaries thither, there was no time to be lost; all the Assembly thinking, that the surest way to obtain a Solid and Lasting Peace, unanimously resolved immediately to Choose their Deputies. But the *Partisans* of the Marquis of *Lich*, (foreseeing that that would destroy all that he had done and Frustrate his and their Expectations) told them, that there was no necessity of sending Ambassadors to Foreign Countries to conclude a Peace with *Castile*, the Count of *Sandwich* having very acceptable Propositions to make to the States (if they would give him Audience;) which might be Agreed to and Concluded by the Marquis of *Lich*, who had receiv'd for that effect, the necessary powers from the Queen Regent, his Mistress.

The Proposition prevailing, the Earl of *Sandwich*, Ambassador of *England*, had Audience of the States, in which he acquainted them, that if the *Portugueze* were now disposed to accept of the Treaty of Peace, which they had refused Two Years before; he could get it Sign'd and Ratified by his Catholick Majesty. Telling them withall that he could only give them Forty Days to accept or refuse that offer; having added that last Clause at the earnest desire of the *Castilians*, who were very apprehensive that if the Treaty was not speedily concluded, the *French* might have time to induce the *Portugueze* to make another Campaign. And the English were at this time so much the more disposed to this Peace, that they begun to be very jealous of the progress of the Arms of *France*; which they would have done any thing to have stopp'd. This

This Proposition of the Earl being Joyfully received by the States, they appointed to treat with him and the Marquis of *Lich*, the Duke of *Cadaval*, the Marquisses of *Nissa*, *Govea* and *Mariadva*, the Count of *Miranda* and the Secretary of State. And these Plenipotentiaries looking upon the Conclusion of that Affair, only as a means to facilitate the bringing about of a greater, and easily agreeing to all, without much Examination; the Regent, the Queen, and the Abbot of *St. Romain*, being much Surpriz'd at that Precipitation, us'd their utmost Efforts to prevent the Signing and Ratification of the Treaty; representing to the States in Publick. and in Private; together, and separately, the Ingagements, and obligations they had to *France*, and the Shamefulness and Ingratitude of entring into a Treaty without the participation of a Prince who had done so much for them; and of Concluding and Ratifying it without his Knowledge. But the States far from taking any notice of these Remonstrations, did all that was in their power to shorten the time prescrib'd; not only exciting one another, and Solliciting themselves the Plenipotentiaries, but likewise introducing into the Assembly the Judge of the People, who having vigorously represented, that such Advantagious offers could not be too soon accepted, his Remonstrance (which there takes place of a Law) joyned to the Cries of the People which were heard without, *Peace, Peace*, was the Cause, or at least the Pretence that induced the States to conclude the Treaty, before the Forty Days were expired. And tho the Prince Regent and the Queen retus'd to sign it, and the Abbot of *St. Romain* protested strongly against it; the States did nevertheless Confirm and Ratify it; making

making use upon that and other occasions since, of the Supream Power which was then Lodg'd in their Hands, with so much Constancy and Resolution, that they have thereby procured to themselves the admiration of those who before blam'd their Conduct. By this Peace (which was concluded at *Lisbon* the 13th of *February*, and publish'd the 10th of *March* 1668.) *Spain* absolutely renounces all Pretensions upon *Portugal*, treating Crown to Crown, and acknowledging that the House of *Braganza* lawfully possesses that Kingdom: And each State renders to the other what formerly belong'd to't, according to the Ancient Limits of both Kingdoms; except only the Town of *Ceuta*, which not having follow'd the motions of the rest of the Dominions of *Portugal*, since the death of King *Sebastian*, remains in the Hands of the *Spaniards*.

Trac.

Traſtatus Pacis inter Carolum II. Regem Hiſpaniæ et Alphonſum VI. Regem Portugalliæ, factus mediante Carolo II. Rege Angliæ. Liſbonæ 13 Februarii Anno. 1668.

I.

Reges Catholicus ut et Portugalliæ declarant, quod nominibus ſuis, ſuorum Regnorum, ut et Subditorum, mediante præſenti Traſtatu, ſancire et firmare intendant perpetuam, ſinceram et in- violabilem pacem, quæ a die inde hujus Traſtatus publicationis, intra 15. dierum ſpatium perſiciende incipiat : et quod ſtatim ab hinc omnes hoſtilitates, tam terra quam mari, in omnibus illorum Regnis, Dominiis, et inter illorum Subditos, cujuſcum- que ſtatus, aut conditionis ii eſſe poterunt, ſine exceptione locorum aut perſonarum, ceſſent. Hiſ- ve declaratur quod intra 15. dierum ſpatium, Traſtatus Ratificetur, et poſt quindecim aliorum dierum ſpatium, Pax publicetur.

II.

Et cum bona fides qua perpetuæ hujus Pacis Traſtatus concluſus fuit, haud patiat, de futuro bello cogitationes ſuſcipere, nec una aut altera Partium deſideret, intuitu talis caſus, ad hoc ſe validius inſtruere, conventum eſt, Quod Regno Portugalliæ, omnia durante hoc bello, armis Regis

R

Ca.

Catholici occupata, ejusdem loca iterum cedentur, eodem plane modo et forma et suis cum limitibus et finibus, quibus ante bellum gavisæ fuerunt, bonaque immobilia in manus pristinorum Dominorum, eorum proprietariorum, aut eorundem Hæredum tradentur; ut tamen in meliorationes cum utilibus et necessariis impensis solvent, damna vero bello illata, ut resarciantur, petere nequeant.

Res quoque tormentaria in omnibus locis, prout extempore deditionis aut occupationis extitit, relinquatur; integrumque esto Incolis quæ illic manere nolunt omnia eorundem mobilia alio avehere, et frugibus quas antehac usque ad publicationem pacis severunt, gaudere. Restitutio hæc locorum intra menses duos fiet, hujusque termini initium, a die publicationis Pacis, sumendum et computandum erit. Sub hac vero restitutione locorum Civitas septia non comprehendetur, sed ea penes Regem Catholicum, certis de causis, maneat. Hisce porro declaratur, quod de bonis illis quæ alio quam belli titulo possidentur, disponere in proprietariorum liberæ potestatis sit.

III.

Subditi et Incolæ illarum Regionum quæ ad alterutrum Regum pertinent fidam intelligentiam et amicitiam invicem colant, et ob præteritas offensiones et illata damna mutuo iras haud gerant, se commercia invicem, tum terra quam mari cum omni securitate et eodem plane modo quo tempore Regis Sebastiani in usu erat secum habeant.

IV.

Subditi et incolæ alterutrius partium reciproce omnibus illis securitatibus, libertatibus et privilegiis

giis gaudeant, quæ Serenissimo Regi Magnæ Britanniae in Tractatu sub die 24. Maii Anno 1667. & in alio Anno 1630. in quantum Tractatus ille vim & vigorem suum adhuc obtinet, concordata & concessa fuerunt & quemadmodum omnes dicti, commercia & eorum immunitates & libertates concernentes articuli, expressè, & sine ulla exceptione aut limitatione, mutuò tantummodo nomine, huc applicentur, ita etiam Natio Portugallensis iisdem privilegiis in Regnis Catholicæ suæ Majestatis eadem ratione quâ tempore Regis Sebastiani consueverunt, fruatur.

V.

Et cum publicatio hujus Tractatus in longe diffitis locis, unius alteriusve Regum ditionum, longius requirat tempus; ut tamen omnes hostilitates cessent, conventum est, ut prædicta Pax in præfatis locis intra unius anni spatium, a die publicationis ejusdem in Hispania factæ, initium capiat. Si quando vero notitia Pacis ad dicta loca citius pervenire queat, tunc præfata hostilitates ab ipsâ horâ cessent, & si post finem memorati anni hostilitates quædam ab aliqua partium exercebantur, omne damnum ab una parte alteri illatum resarciatur & debitè refundetur.

VI.

Omnes in bello captivi, cujuscumque status aut nationis ii erunt, absque mora aut ullo arresto statim tam ab una quam ab altera parte nemine excepto & nonobstante causa quacumque, sine pretextu in contrarium obtento liberi dimittentur liberatio-

que

que a die publicatæ Pacis & sequentibus temporibus principium ducet.

VII.

Et quo eo melius & firmitus Pax hæc colatur, promittunt altissime memorati Reges Catholicus & Lusitanus, respective liberum & securum introitum & exitum, tam in omnibus maribus quam in fluminibus navigalibus, sibi invicem præstituros, & viribus omnibus adjumento alteri alterum fore, quo a Piratis ea purgentur, qui ut capiantur & secundum rigorem summum puniantur operam dabunt, ad quod ipsum invicem plenissima libertas & permissio impertitur.

VIII.

Omnes alienationes bonorum & Hereditatum & hujusmodi tales dispositiones, occasione belli factæ, nullæ & nullarum virium esse, non secus ac si nunquam factæ fuissent, declarentur, atque uterque Regum, vi hujus Tractatus utrorumque subditorum excessus & commissæ ipsis remittet & oblivioni tradet, Hereditatesve, quæ tanquam commissæ forte ad manus Fiscalis & Regium Fiscum venerunt, Dominis proprietaris, ad quos i, nisi intercidisset bellum, pertinuerant, restituentur, dictisque iis Dominis omnimoda libertate fruendi plenaria facultas relinquetur.

Reditus & fructus vero talium bonorum relinquentur usque ad diem publicatæ Pacis, iis qui durante bello possederunt: Si autem lites & impetitiones eorum nomine existent, ex publice quietis gratia quamprimum determinentur & unicuique, qui quicquam prætendit actiones suæ eas intra

tra terminum annualem intentandi reserventur, quæ breviter & summariter in sequenti anno decidentur & finientur.

IX.

Quoties vero contra tenorem hujus Tractatus Incole quidam præter jussu & mandatu, utrorumque respectivè Regum, alteri damnum inferrent, illud resarciatur, & violatores, si deprehendi poterunt, pœnis subjiciantur: neque fas esto hanc ob causam ad arma venire, & pacem rumpere, sed casu quo via juris denegetur, aut impedita reddi velit contra delinquentes, uti fieri assolet, Repressalia decernentur.

X.

Concessum esto Regno Portugalliae ob interesse quod ipsum reciproce & inviolabiliter, cum Regno Angliae habet, talibus unionibus offensivis & defensivis Fœderibus se jungere, quæ Anglia & Hispania invicem cum omnibus suis Confederatis coadunatis Consiliis purgent, atque Conditiones & mutuae stipulationes de quibus eo in casu inter partes convenerit, vel ex post facto, iis apponentur, vigore presentis Tractatus, eodem modo ac si in illo speciatim expresse exstarent, aut Confœderatorum nominibus designatæ essent, inviolabiliter serventur.

XI.

Stipulantur sæpe altissime memorati Reges, Catholicus & Portugalicus nihilum quidam contra, aut in detrimentum hujus Pacis semet commissuros aut permissuros, ut id vel directe vel indirecte fiat,

Et si forte tale quid contra eam attentetur, id sine mora reparetur Et resarciatur. In maiorem observationem omnium superius memoratorum semet una cum Rege Angliæ tanquam mediatore Et conservatore huius Pacis obstringunt ad eorundem implementum, Et renunciant omnibus, juribus Et consuetudinibus aut aliis rebus quæ iisdem adversabuntur.

XII.

Pax hæc in locis consuetis, quam citissimè id fieri poterit, publicetur, Et post ratificationem Dominorum Regum Catholici Et Portugallici reciproce, secundum morem usitatum, permutetur Et extradatur.

XIII.

Tandem præsentibus Articuli Et in iis comprehensa Pax, a Serenissimo Rege Magnæ Britannia, tanquam Mediatore Et Conservatore, in gratiam utriusque Partium, intra spatium quatuor mensium, similiter ratihabebitur, Et accepta feretur.

IX

Tran-

TRANSLATION.

The Treaty of Peace concluded between Charles II. King of Spain, and Alfonso VI. King of Portugal, by the Mediation of Charles II. King of England, at Lisbon, 13th of February, 1668.

I.

THEIR Catholick and Portugueze Majesties Declare, by this present Treaty that in their Own, their Kingdoms, and their Subjects Names, they make and confirm a perpetual sincere and inviolable Peace, which shall Commence from the Day of the Publication of this Treaty, and immediately all Hostilities shall cease in all their Kingdoms, Dominions and States, between their Subjects of whatsoever Station or Condition, without exception of Places or Persons; declaring by these Presents that this Treaty shall be ratified in Fifteen Days, and the Peace publish'd in Fifteen Days after the Ratification.

II.

And as the Sincerity, with which this Treaty of Universal Peace is made, do's not permit any thoughts of a future War, that neither

ther of the Parties in that Case may have Reason to desire to be in a better Posture, it is agreed that all the Places taken by the Arms of the Catholick King during this War, shall be restor'd to the Kingdom of *Portugal*; and likewise, that all the Places taken and possess'd by the Arms of the King of *Portugal*, during this War, shall be restor'd to the Catholick King in the same Condition, of the same Manner, and with the same Bounds and Limits which they enjoy'd before the War; and that all immovable Goods shall be restored into the Hands of their Proprietors and Lords, or their Heirs; they however paying the Reparations which may have been usefully and necessarily made, without pretending any Satisfaction for Damages occasion'd by the War; and that the Artillery shall be left in all the Places, in the same manner it was at the time of their taking, or surrender; that such of the Inhabitants as will not remain in any of those Places, shall be allowed to Transport elsewhere their Moveables, and to reap the Fruits they have sow'd before the Publication of the Peace; that this restitution of Places shall be made in Three Months time after the Day of the said Publication; that the Town of *Ceuta* shall not be comprehended in this Restitution, (but shall for certain Reasons) remain in the Power of the Catholick King; Declaring by these Presents, that all Proprietors may dispose of the Goods they Possess, under another Title, than that of the War.

III. ' That

III.

‘ That the Subjects and Inhabitants of the
 ‘ Countries, belonging to either of the Kings,
 ‘ shall entertain a good Correspondence and faith-
 ‘ ful Friendship with one another, without re-
 ‘ membring past Offences, or reserving any Re-
 ‘ sentment of Damages receiv’d in the War; and
 ‘ shall Traffick together in all Surety both by
 ‘ Sea and Land, in the same manner they did in
 ‘ the time of King *Sebastean*.

IV.

‘ That the Subjects and Inhabitants of either
 ‘ side shall reciprocally injoy all the Sureties,
 ‘ Liberties and Privileges, which were granted
 ‘ to the most Serene King of *Great Britain*, by
 ‘ the Treaty of the 24th of *May* 1667. and by
 ‘ that of 1630. so far as that Treaty is yet in
 ‘ Vigour; and that all its Articles concerning
 ‘ Commerce, Immunity and Privileges, shall
 ‘ be here expressly apply’d without any Excep-
 ‘ tion, Limitation, only changing the Names;
 ‘ and likewise the *Portuguese* Nation shall enjoy
 ‘ all the Kingdoms of his Catholick Majesty, the
 ‘ same Privileges they enjoy’d in the time of
 ‘ King *Sebastean*.

V.

‘ And as it will be a considerable time be-
 ‘ fore this Treaty of Peace can be publish’d in
 ‘ the Foreign Dominions of both Kingdoms, to
 ‘ the end nevertheless that all Hostilities may
 ‘ cease

‘ cease; it is agreed, that the said Peace shall
 ‘ Commence in those Places within one Year,
 ‘ from the Day that it shall be publish’d in *Spain*;
 ‘ mean time, if the News of the Peace can be
 ‘ carried thither sooner, all Hostilities shall
 ‘ cease from that Moment; and if after the said
 ‘ Year is expir’d, any Hostility is committed by
 ‘ either Party, all the Damage that is done shall
 ‘ be refunded by those that have committed it.

VI.

‘ All the Prisoners of War on either side, of
 ‘ what ever Quality or Nation they be, shall be
 ‘ set at Liberty without delay, without any Ex-
 ‘ ception, and notwithstanding any Cause or Pre-
 ‘ tence whatsoever to the contrary; and the
 ‘ said enlargement shall Commence immediately
 ‘ after the Peace.

VII.

‘ And to the end that this Peace may be the
 ‘ more firmly preserv’d, the Two most Serene
 ‘ Kings aforesaid, of *Spain* and *Portugal*, Pro-
 ‘ mise respectively, to give to each other’s Subjects
 ‘ free Entry into all their Seas, and Navigable Ri-
 ‘ vers, and mutually to assist one another with
 ‘ all their Force. to cleanse the Sea of Pirates
 ‘ whom they endeavour to take, and punish ac-
 ‘ cording to the utmost Rigour, for which they
 ‘ grant one another intire Liberty and Per-
 ‘ mission.

VIII. ‘ It

VIII.

‘ It is declared that all Alienations of Goods
 ‘ and Inheritances, or other Dispositions of, that
 ‘ Nature occasion’d by the War, shall be void
 ‘ and of no more effect, than if they had never
 ‘ been made, and that by Vertue of this Treaty
 ‘ both Kings shall Pardon and Forgive each others
 ‘ Subjects, forgetting all Injuries and Violences
 ‘ by them committed ; and that the Inheritances
 ‘ which have been confiscated for the use of ei-
 ‘ ther of the Kings, shall be restor’d to the Lords
 ‘ and Proprietors to whom they should have be-
 ‘ long’d, in Case there had been no War; and
 ‘ that the said Proprietors shall enjoy the same
 ‘ in all Liberty ; but as to the Fruits and Re-
 ‘ venues of the said Inheritances, they shall re-
 ‘ main till the Publication of the Peace in their
 ‘ Hands who possess’d them during the War;
 ‘ that if any Processes or Suits at Law should
 ‘ happen on that Occasion, for the better pre-
 ‘ serving of the publick Repose, they shall be
 ‘ terminated as speedily as possible ; all Persons
 ‘ who have any Pretensions being to intent their
 ‘ Actions within the space of one Year, that
 ‘ they may be briefly and summarily discuss’d.

IX.

‘ But in Case it happens against the Tenour
 ‘ of this Treaty, that any of the Inhabitants of
 ‘ either Kingdom shall do any Damage to those
 ‘ of the other, without the Command of one of
 ‘ the Kings respectively, the Damage shall be
 ‘ repair’d, and the Authors thereof punish’d, if
 ‘ they

‘ they can be apprehended ; neither shall it be
 ‘ lawful, in that Case to have recourse to Arms,
 ‘ or break the Peace ; but if Justice is refus’d, Re-
 ‘ prisal shall be made upon the Offenders, accor-
 ‘ ding to Custom.

X.

‘ It shall be free to the King of *Portugal*,
 ‘ because of the reciprocal and inseparable In-
 ‘ terest he has with the King of *England*, to en-
 ‘ ter into all Alliances and Leagues Offensive and
 ‘ Defensive, which *England* and *Spain* may make
 ‘ together with their Allies and Confederates ;
 ‘ and the mutual Conditions and Stipulations
 ‘ which shall be agreed upon in that Case be-
 ‘ tween the Respective Parties, shall be invio-
 ‘ lably observ’d by Vertue of this present Trea-
 ‘ ty, as much as if they were expressly specified
 ‘ in it, in the Names of the said Confederates.

XI.

‘ The most Serene Kings of *Spain* and *Portugal*
 ‘ aforesaid, do hereby Promise that they shall
 ‘ do nothing to the Prejudice of the Peace, nor
 ‘ shall allow any thing to be done against it,
 ‘ directly, or indirectly ; and that if by Misfor-
 ‘ tune any thing should happen to be done against
 ‘ it, immediate Reparation shall be made ; and
 ‘ for the better Observation of what is above,
 ‘ they oblige themselves (together with the King
 ‘ of *England*, as Mediator and Guarantee of this
 ‘ Treaty) to cause it to be put in Execution ;
 ‘ absolutely reconciling all Rights and Customs
 ‘ contrary to it.

XII. ‘ This

XII.

‘ This Peace shall be publish’d as soon as possible in the ordinary Places, and the Exchange shall be reciprocally made and deliver’d after the Ratification of their Catholick and Portuguese Majesties, according to the ordinary Custom.

XIII.

‘ In fine, the present Articles and the Peace contain’d in them, shall be ratified and accepted by the most Serene King of *Great Britain*, as Mediator and Guarantee in favours of the Two Parties, within the space of Four Months.

All those Articles were Sign’d, by *Don Gaspar* of *Haro Guzman* and *Arragon*, Marquis *Carpio*, *Edward* Earl of *Sandwich*, and *Don Nuna Alvarez Periera*, Duke of *Cadaval*, *Don Gaspo Lewis* of *Guma*, Marquis of *Nissa*, *Don Juan* of *Silva*, Marquis of *Gobea*, *Don Antonio Lewis* of *Meneses*, Marquis of *Marialva*, *Henry* of *Sousa*, *Tuares* of *Silva*, Count of *Miranda*, and *Pedro* of *Veira* of *Silva*, Commissioners, Deputies of the Three Crowns.

The States after that first Essay of their full Power and Authority, examin’d the Revenues and Charges of the Crown, took an exact Account of what was Necessary, and assign’d certain Funds for it ; taking off, and abolishing all other Taxes and Impositions on the Kingdom. After which they passed to the Examination of *Don Alfonso’s* Admini-

Administration, and judging him incapable of Governing and Maintaining them either in Peace or War, and consequently unworthy of Reigning over them, they sent a Deputation to offer the Crown to the Infant *Don Pedro*, upon Conditions which they said, *They should be very Sorry if he did not Agreee to, but did not doubt withal but they might find Persons of Merit to accept the Kingdom at the same Terms.*

The Prince (who was but just deliver'd from a long and grievous Oppression, and had other Affairs in his Mind which touch'd him yet nearer the Heart than that) consenting to all that the States desir'd of him, was invest'd with the Government of the Kingdom, under the Title of *Regent*: Which tho' it did not please the People, who would have had him immediately take the name of KING, it neververtheless procur'd him the applause of all the *Grandees*; who very much commended his Moderation.

As one Misfortune seldom comes alone, King *Alfonso* after having been declar'd incapable of Reigning, was likewise judg'd impotent by an Ecclesiastical Sentence, giv'n the 24th of *March*, declaring that Prince's Marriage with the Princess of *Aumal* Null: Which Sentence the Queen having caus'd to be signified the same Day to the States, desiring of them her Patrimony, that she might return to *France*, they resolving to use their utmost Endeavours to retain that Princeess amongst them, that they might do it with the more Honour and Satisfaction, determin'd that each Body of the States should separately make an Address to the Prince Regent, in which they should prepresent to him in Writing, the Reasons for which they earnestly desir'd, that he might
Marry

marry that Princess. To which *Don Pedro* (having read the Three Supplications presented to him) answered, *That as he was resolved that nothing should ever be wanting on his part that might in any manner contribute to the Glory and Advantage of the Kingdom, they might assure themselves that he would give his consent to that Marriage.* And the same Deputies going afterwards to demand the same favour of the Princess of *Aumal*, she being extreamly touch'd with the extraordinary Marks of Affection and Tenderness which were giv'n her by all the Degrees of Men in the Kingdom; and having consented to treat of that Match, the Prince ravished with that favourable Answer, immediately order'd the thing to be laid before the Counsel of State, who unanimously approving it, and doing all that was in their power to hasten its Conclusion, the Marquess of *Nissa* and *Don Rodrigo of Meneses* were nam'd by the Prince, and the Duke of *Cadaval* and Marquess of *Marialva* by the Princess, to draw up the Contract of Marriage.

So soon as that Proposition was divulg'd, People begun to doubt whether the Marriage could be lawfully concluded without a Dispensation; for tho' they be not very scrupulous about those Matters in *Portugal*, the Publick Decency seem'd to require some greater Formality than a Simple Sentence of the Officiality. And as they were a seeking out Doctors to deliberate upon those Difficulties, *Verjus* arriv'd from *France* in the very Nick of Time, with a Dispensation which because it may seem to have been a Contrivance beforehand; I shall here give you a brief and true account of such an unexpected Accident.

The

The Bishop of *Laon* going one Day to *St. German's* with the Secretary of State, and discoursing of the Affairs of *Portugal*, and of the Consequences they might have, that able Politician who had in his hands the Pope's Bull of *Legat a latere*, telling the Bishop of *Laon*, That he believ'd that it contain'd the Power of granting a Dispensation, and that it being possible that the Infant might be desirous to marry the Princess of *Aumal*, it would be very convenient to send him one, since it might be very useful and could do no harm; they accordingly dispatch'd *Verjus* with a Dispensation; and he arriving very happily at *Lisbon* at the very time that it was wanted, by vertue of the said Dispensation the Marquess of *Marialva* representing the Prince, and the Duke of *Cadaval* the Princess, were married by the Bishop of *Targua*; and the Second of *April*, *Don Pedro* going to the Convent of *Hope*, surrounded by all the Grantees of the Kingdom, thence conducted the Princess to the Palace of *Alcantara*; where they received the Nuptial Benediction from the said Bishop, with the Acclamations of an infinite number of Spectators.

The 9th of *June* following the Regent having taken the Oath to the States to maintain the Laws of the Kingdom, they likewise (representing all the Monarchy) took the Oath of Fidelity to him; and from that Day all Publick Writs were issued out in the Name of the Regent, who was not only acknowledged by his People, but by all the Kings and Potentates in *Europe*.

The Assembly of the States continued at *Lisbon* till the Second of *August* that it broke up, and as there appeared in what had past, and especially in the Regent's Marriage with the Princess

Princess of *Aumal*, some sort of Precipitation ; it was resolv'd that the Father *de Ville* should be sent to *Rome*, where he was no sooner arrived, but Pope *Clement IX.* confirm'd the Dispensation granted by the Cardinal of *Vendome*, as Legat *a latere*, writing himself (before the first Year of the Marriage was expired) to the Prince Regent : So that the Thing was accommodated to every Bodies Satisfaction.

While the Court was thus endeavouring to make the Prince Regent's Marriage Valid, the People who are generally inclin'd to pity the unfortunate. seeing that Ships were preparing to carry away *Don Alfonso*, and imagining that that Prince was to be sent to *Guinea*, began to murmur against the Court ; alledging that it was enough to take from him his Crown and his Wife, without depriving him likewise of his natural Air, and of the sight of his Native Country, to expose him to the Rigours of Foreign Climates. But the prevailing Party did in those beginnings so imperiously exercise their Authority , that no Body durst speak openly against their Proceedings. And the Infant on the other hand to justify his Conduct towards his Brother, caused Letters to be written to the Ministers residing in Foreign Courts to this Purpose.

' Being desirous that my Brother should enjoy
' more Liberty and Sweetness than the Three
' Estates of the Kingdom assembled in Parliament
' have thought fit to grant him ; and considering
' that if I let him remain in any Place of the
' Kingdom far from me, he will incessantly give
' Ground (of the Humour he is) to renew the
' Complaints which were continually made of him
' in the first Years of his Reign, and so expose

S

' on

on all Occasions his Life with his Authority ; knowing likewise that he himself desires to abide in a place where he may exercise himself in the full Enjoyment of the Pleasures of the Country, free from all Care and Ceremony ; the better to procure him the Recreations in which he delights, without being wanting in any thing that is due to his Person, and Dignity, I have resolv'd to his great satisfaction) that my Brother shall go to reside in the Island of *Tercera*, not only because that place is situated under the same Climate with this, but likewise because the Physicians assure that it is very fit for some Distempers with which he is afflicted, that Island being also very pleasant and agreeable, abounding with Wild Fowl and Beasts for Hunting, as in all the other Delights of Humane Life, leaving it free to his Domesticks and the Lords which accompany him, to chuse the place of his Residence, either in the Market-Town of *Praya*, or in the Town of *Angra*, or at the Royal House of Fort St. *Philip's* ; providing that the Place they chuse be pleasant and agreeable to him. And that he may make his Voyage with Honour and Safety, the Count of *Prada* nam'd for the Extraordinary Embassy to *Rome*, has received Orders to Convoy him to the Island of *Tercera*, with a Squadron of our Fleet, assisted by the Count of *Atalaia*, and Don *John* of *Sousa*, Intendant of our Household, Don *Lewis* of *Silveira* Governor of *Viso*, and *Miguel Carlos* of *Tavora*, Camp-Master of the Regiment of the *Armada* , having likewise ordered to accompany him *Manuel Nuez Leitan*, Serjeant of Battel ; whom we have appointed Governor of the Fort

St

' *St. John*, in the same Island ; with many other
' Lords, Officers and Domesticks ; all being done
' with the general Consent and Applause of the
' whole Kingdom. Of which I have thought fit
' to acquaint you, to the end that being inform'd
' of my Resolution, and of the Sincerity of my
' Proceeding, you may Communicate it to the
' Court where you reside ; and that the Gazettes
' and other Publick Relations may speak with the
' same Sincerity and Verity.

Lisbon the 25th of
May 1667.

So that in fine that Prince being conducted to the Island of *Tercera*, by the Count of *Prada*, after having liv'd there some Years in the Company of several *Fidalques*, who had been banish'd for Matters Foreign to my Subject, he was brought back to *Sintra*, which is a Royal House within Four Leagues of *Lisbon*, where 'tis said he remain'd till the Day of his Death, without any other Exercise than that of taking of Snuff, Eating, Drinking, and Sleeping.

The 6th of May the Count of *Etrees* Vice-Admiral of *France* came to an Anchor before *Lisbon* with Four Men of War, and Fourteen Transport Ships, to imbarck the *French* Troops for *Rochel* Count *Schomberg* having demanded all those Ships, with a Design to carry them to *Flanders*, expecting that the War should not have been so soon ended there, and designing to Imbarck 28 Horses per Troop that they might be in the greater readines and better condition for Service. The *Portugueze* had before that time Li-

censed their Troops; and many of them had pass'd into the service of *Spain*.

Count *Schomberg* before he left *Lisbon*, likewise imbarc'd in English Ships, the Auxiliaries of that Nation, of whom he gave the Conduct to Count *Frederick* of *Schomberg* his Eldest Son; who having deliver'd them into the Hand of his Brittannick Majesty, retir'd to one of his Father's Houses in *Germany*, where he liv'd in great Reputation.

Count *Schomberg* having taken leave of the Court and Grandees of *Portugal*, and received a Thousand Testimonies of their Affection and Esteem, imbarking at *Lisbon* the 1st of *June* with the Praises and Blessings of all the People, arriv'd the 14th of the same Month before *Rochel*, where he heard the Peace was concluded; *France* retaining what she had conquer'd the Year before in *Flanders*, and restoring Franch County to *Spain*.

Next Day by the King's Order, the Troops which were arriv'd from *Portugal* were broke, but all Commissions given there by Count *Schomberg* subsisted, and these Officers have always since keep'd their Degrees according to the date of their Commission, as well as if they had been given by the King.

Count *Schomberg* having promis'd at the raising the *German* Regiments, that in case the King had no service for them after the Wars of *Portugal*, they should have free passage to the Frontiers of *Germany*, without paying for their necessaries, that Regiment was keep'd on foot, and Count *Charles* of *Schomberg* who was Lieutenant Collonel of it, going to acquaint the Marquis

quis of *Louvois* Secretary of State, that it was arriv'd at *Nantes*, he having review'd it, was so much taken with it, that he obtain'd Permission of his Majesty, to cause it to be Incorporated into that of *Alsace*.

As for Count *Schomberg*, the manner in which he was received by the King, has sufficiently appeared since, by the great and weighty Employments, with which he has been intrusted, and of which he has always so well acquitted himself, that he is daily Gratified with all the Honours and Dignities that a General can desire; all which is confirm'd by the Liberalities with which his Majesty has been pleas'd from time to time to recompense his services, and Fidelity to *France*.

The *Spaniards*, tho they had that Year concluded a Peace with *Portugal*, and afterwards with *France*, were not in more Tranquility than they us'd to be at home; for *Don Juan* of *Austria's* differences with the Queen Regent still Augmenting, he so manag'd things by the means of his Creatures in *Spain*, that having first oblig'd that Princess to send back the Father *Nitard* to *Italy*, he afterwards reduc'd her to the necessity of leaving the Court her self; whither she could never return till after that Princes Death. Twas during his Regency that was rais'd the Regiment of Guards call'd to this Day, *the Schombergs*, so much was that Name than in Reputation in all the *Spanish* Dominions; where they did not only admire the great Actions of that General, but endeavour'd to imitate him ev'n in his manner of cloathing himself, which since has been so much follow'd, especially in *Portugal*, that to suppress that abuse, the Priests have been frequently oblig'd

blig'd to make Proclamation in all their Parishes
forbidding all persons in time to come to adorn the
Saints a la Schomberguoise. Which was occasi-
on'd by the People's often borrowing in (Memory,
of Count Schomberg) imbroider'd Coats, long
Periwigs and French Points, to adorn the Images
of their Saints, which are frequently carried
about in Procession in that Countrey.



F I N I S.

The Reader is desired to correct these following Errata's, occasioned by the Translators not being always in the Way to overlook the Sheets.

PAge 9. Line 29. and in several other Places, for *to morrow*, Read *the morrow*. p. 11. l. 35. f. *ago*, r. *before*. p. 14. l. 21. f. *an*, r. *a*. p. 14. l. 28. f. *Life*, r. *Lives*. p. 16. l. 4, and 5. f. *uncaple*, r. *uncapable*. p. 35. l. 28. f. *foy*, r. *for*. p. 56. l. 6. f. 55000, r. 5500. p. 76. l. 21. f. *divice*, r. *device*. p. 111. l. 21. f. *to day*, r. *that day*. p. 119. l. 21. f. *them* r. *him*. p. 123. l. 21. f. *of them having*, r. *of having*. p. 126. l. 31. f. *himself to go*, r. *himself not to go*. p. 127. l. 25. f. *with concert of*, r. *of concert with*. p. 127. l. 34. f. *regard or decency*, r. *regard to decency*. p. 128. l. 11. f. *ordered him to*, r. *ordered to*. p. 130. l. 10. f. *Confiscations being of*, r. *Confiscations of*. p. 130. l. 11. f. *not sufficient*, r. *not being sufficient*. p. 131. l. 22. f. *with*, r. *without*. p. 135. l. 9, and 10. f. *continuing*, r. *continued*. p. 140. l. 21. f. *ordered*, r. *ordering*. p. 144. l. 4. f. *and as*, r. *and in as*. p. 144. l. 15. f. *made answer*, r. *he made answer*. p. 159. l. 23. f. *cause*, r. *order*. p. 182. l. 10. f. *investing*, r. *investing it*. p. 184. l. 22. f. *Prayers for her Soul*, r. *Prayers to be made for her Soul*. p. 189. l. 1. f. *upon a Centry*, r. *upon Centry*. p. 192. l. 34. f. *induc'd*, r. *indued*. p. 194. l. 8. f. *which*, r. *upon which*. p. 199. l. 18. f. *visibly*, r. *visible*. p. 212. l. 33. f. *for that the French &c.* r. *it is agreed that the French*. p. 222. l. 4. f. *to Marquis*, r. *to the Marquis*. p. 222. l. 26. f. *that*, r. *what*. p. 223. l. 4. f. *Humours*, r. *ill Humours*. p. 223. l. 9. f. *her Father*, r. *the Father*. p. 223. l. 14. f. *Lady Mar-ques*, r. *Lady Marchioness*. p. 226. l. 34. f. *they had*, r. *that they had*. p. 233. l. 13. f. *at*, r. *and*. p. 244. l. 27. r. *eæ i.* ib. l. 28. f. *intercidisset*, r. *intercedisset*. p. 245. l. 2. r. *summariter*. ib. l. 27. f. *expresse*, r. *expressæ*. p. 248. l. 13. f. *their Proprietors*, r. *their ancient Proprietors*. p. 249. l. 23. f. *Immunity*, r. *Immunities*. ib. l. 25. f. *Exception*, *Limitation*, r. *Exception*, or *Limitation*. ib. l. 27. f. *enjoy all*, r. *enjoy in all*. p. 252. l. 4. f. *Reprisal*, r. *Reprisals*. ib. l. 26. f. *of the Peace*, r. *of this Peace*. ib. l. 35. f. *reconciling*, r. *re-nouncing*.

*BOOKS Printed for Ralph Smith at the
Bible under the Piazza of the Royal-
Exchange.*

THE New Description and State of *England*,
with the Maps of the Countries of *England*
and *Wales*, in Fifty Three Copper Plates, newly
Design'd, exactly Drawn and Engraven by best
Artists.

Mechanical Account of ~~Books~~ in several Essays.
By *Richard Mead*, M. D. Price 3 s. 6 d.

Description and Uses of the Cœlestial and Ter-
restrial Globes. In Seven Parts, By Mr. *Robert*
Morden. Price 4 s.

Sir Walter Raleigh's History Abridg'd; with his
Life, Trial and Death. Publish'd by his Grand-
son, *Philip Raleigh*, Esq;



